

TOPOLOGY AND TOPOLOGICAL SEQUENCE ENTROPY

LUBOMÍR SNOHA, XIANGDONG YE AND RUIFENG ZHANG

ABSTRACT. Let X be a compact metric space and $T : X \rightarrow X$ be continuous. Let $h^*(T)$ be the supremum of topological sequence entropies of T over all subsequences of \mathbb{Z}_+ and $S(X)$ be the set of the values $h^*(T)$ for all continuous maps T on X . It is known that $\{0\} \subseteq S(X) \subseteq \{0, \log 2, \log 3, \dots\} \cup \{\infty\}$. Only three possibilities for $S(X)$ have been observed so far, namely $S(X) = \{0\}$, $S(X) = \{0, \log 2, \infty\}$ and $S(X) = \{0, \log 2, \log 3, \dots\} \cup \{\infty\}$.

In this paper we completely solve the problem of finding all possibilities for $S(X)$ by showing that in fact for every set $\{0\} \subseteq A \subseteq \{0, \log 2, \log 3, \dots\} \cup \{\infty\}$ there exists a one-dimensional continuum X_A with $S(X_A) = A$. In the construction of X_A we use Cook continua. This is apparently the first application of these very rigid continua in dynamics.

We further show that the same result is true if one considers only homeomorphisms rather than continuous maps. The problem for group actions is also addressed. For some class of group actions (by homeomorphisms) we provide an analogous result, but in full generality this problem remains open. The result works also for an analogous class of semigroup actions (by continuous maps).

CONTENTS

1.	Introduction	2
1.1.	Supremum topological sequence entropy and main results	2
1.2.	Rigid spaces, Cook continua and their applications	5
1.3.	Outline of the proof of Main Theorem	6
2.	Preliminaries from dynamics and topology	9
2.1.	Topological sequence entropy, sequence entropy tuples	9
2.2.	Retracts, chains in connected spaces, continua, Cook continua in the plane	12
3.	Systems with zero entropy and infinite supremum sequence entropy	14
3.1.	A map $T : X_1 \rightarrow X_1$ with $h(T) = 0$ and $h^*(T) = \infty$	14
3.2.	Modifying X_1 to get a continuum	16
4.	A continuum X with $S(X) = \{0, \infty\}$	17
4.1.	Bricks and outline of the construction of X	17
4.2.	Notation for bricks and details of the construction of X	18
4.3.	More terminology for parts of the space X . Properties of X	20
4.4.	Properties of continuous selfmaps of X	22
4.5.	Induced function \widehat{F} . The sets $\text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$ and $\text{Fix}(F)$	26
4.6.	Proof that $S(X) = \{0, \infty\}$	29
5.	A map $T : X_1 \rightarrow X_1$ with $h^*(T) = \log 2$	32
5.1.	Construction of a system (X_1, T)	32
5.2.	Proof of $h^*(T) = \log 2$	39
6.	A continuum X with $S(X) = \{0, \log 2\}$	47
6.1.	Outline of the construction of X	47

2010 *Mathematics Subject Classification.* Primary: 37B40, 54H20. Secondary: 37B45, 54F15.

Key words and phrases. Topological sequence entropy, rigid continuum, Cook continuum.

6.2.	More details of the construction of X	49
6.3.	A map $G: X \rightarrow X$ and a need to specify the geometry of X	57
6.4.	Specification of geometry of X	58
6.5.	Properties of the map G	61
6.6.	Properties of continuous selfmaps of X and proof that $S(X) = \{0, \log 2\}$	69
7.	Generalization from $\log 2$ to $\log m$	73
7.1.	A map $T: X_1 \rightarrow X_1$ with $h^*(T) = \log m$ for $m \geq 3$	73
7.2.	A continuum X with $S(X) = \{0, \log m\}, m \geq 3$	78
8.	Proof of Main Theorem. Analogues in other settings	78
8.1.	Proof of Main Theorem	78
8.2.	Analogue of Main Theorem for homeomorphisms	80
8.3.	Analogues of Main Theorem for group actions and semigroup actions	83
9.	Questions	88

1. INTRODUCTION

1.1. Supremum topological sequence entropy and main results. By a *topological dynamical system* (t.d.s. for short) we mean a pair (X, T) , where X is a nonempty compact metric space and $T: X \rightarrow X$ is a continuous map. A (metric) *continuum* is a nonempty connected compact metric space.

In 1958 Kolmogorov associated to any measure preserving system (X, \mathcal{B}, μ, T) an isomorphic invariant, namely the measure theoretical entropy $h_\mu(T)$. Later on, in 1965, Adler, Konheim and McAndrew introduced in any t.d.s. an analogous concept, topological entropy $h(T)$. Systems with positive entropy are random in certain sense, and systems with zero entropy are said to be *deterministic* though they may exhibit complicated behaviors. There are several ways to distinguish between deterministic systems. One way to do this is to introduce the concept of entropy with respect to a (strictly increasing) subsequence of \mathbb{Z}_+ (here we think of \mathbb{Z}_+ as the sequence $0, 1, 2, \dots$), see [33] and [18], or the survey [10]. Another way to do this is to investigate the so called complexity, see [5].

To study topological analogues of Kolmogorov systems, the authors in [4] and [27] introduced the notion of entropy pairs and entropy tuples. In [24] and [26] the authors investigated sequence entropy pairs, and sequence entropy tuples and sequence entropy tuples for a measure, respectively. In Subsection 2.1 we recall the definitions of a (sequence) entropy and a (sequence) entropy tuple. A tuple is called *intrinsic* if all its entries are pairwise different.

In [28] the authors defined a notion called maximal pattern entropy. One of equivalent definitions is that the *maximal pattern entropy* $h^*(T)$ of a t.d.s. (X, T) is the supremum of topological sequence entropies $h^A(T)$ of T over all subsequences A of \mathbb{Z}_+ :

$$h^*(T) = \sup\{h^A(T) : A \text{ is a subsequence of } \mathbb{Z}_+\} . \quad (1.1)$$

This is why we will, throughout the paper, call the quantity $h^*(T)$ also the *supremum topological sequence entropy of (X, T) or T* (some authors denote it by $h_\infty(T)$). In [28] it is also showed that

$$h^*(T) = \sup\{\log n : \text{there is an intrinsic sequence entropy tuple of length } n\} \quad (1.2)$$

(to be precise, we should speak on sequence entropy tuples for the map T ; here and below we however abuse terminology if it is obvious which map is considered). Since $h^{k\mathbb{Z}_+}(T) = h(T^k) = kh(T)$, positive entropy implies infinite supremum topological sequence entropy (the converse is not true), and hence supremum topological sequence entropy is especially useful for zero entropy systems. By [28], if T is a homeomorphism then $h^*(T^n) = h^*(T)$ for all $n \neq 0$. The same proof gives that if T is a continuous map then this is true for $n \geq 1$. If X is a countable compact metric space, it is known that $h(T) = 0$ for any continuous map T from X into itself. Note that this is not the case for the topological sequence entropy [48] and our construction heavily relies on this fact. See Subsection 2.1 for the definitions of sequence entropy and basic properties.

The notion of the supremum topological sequence entropy fits especially well into the interval dynamics. To explain this, recall first the Sharkovsky ordering, see [40], on the set $\mathbb{N} \cup \{2^\infty\}$:

$$3 \succ 5 \succ 7 \succ \dots \succ 2 \cdot 3 \succ 2 \cdot 5 \succ 2 \cdot 7 \succ \dots \succ 4 \cdot 3 \succ 4 \cdot 5 \succ 4 \cdot 7 \succ \dots \succ \dots \\ \succ 2^n \cdot 3 \succ 2^n \cdot 5 \succ 2^n \cdot 7 \succ \dots \succ \dots \succ 2^\infty \succ \dots \succ 2^n \succ \dots \succ 4 \succ 2 \succ 1.$$

We will also use the symbol \succeq in the natural way. For $t \in \mathbb{N} \cup \{2^\infty\}$ we denote by $S(t)$ the set $\{k \in \mathbb{N} : t \succeq k\}$ ($S(2^\infty)$ stands for the set $\{1, 2, 4, \dots, 2^k, \dots\}$). Denote by $C(I)$ the set of continuous selfmaps of a real compact interval I . For $T \in C(I)$ let $\text{Per}(T)$ be the set of periods of its periodic points. By Sharkovsky theorem, for every $T \in C(I)$ there exists a $t \in \mathbb{N} \cup \{2^\infty\}$ with $\text{Per}(T) = S(t)$ and, on the other hand, for every $t \in \mathbb{N} \cup \{2^\infty\}$ there exists a $T \in C(I)$ with $\text{Per}(T) = S(t)$.

If $\text{Per}(T) = S(t)$, then T is said to be of *Sharkovsky type* t . When speaking of types we consider them to be ordered by the Sharkovsky ordering. So if a map T is of type 2^∞ or greater than 2^∞ or less than 2^∞ , then, respectively, $\text{Per}(T) = \{1, 2, \dots, 2^k, \dots\}$ or T has a periodic point with period not a power of 2 or $\text{Per}(T) = \{1, 2, \dots, 2^n\}$ for some $n \in \mathbb{Z}_+$.

The topological entropy of $T \in C(I)$ is positive if and only if T is of type greater than 2^∞ (see [1, Theorem 4.4.20] and references therein). Further, if $T \in C(I)$ is of type greater than 2^∞ then it is Li-Yorke chaotic and if it is of type less than 2^∞ then it is not Li-Yorke chaotic, while among the maps of type 2^∞ there are both Li-Yorke chaotic and non-chaotic maps, see [41]. By [14], $T \in C(I)$ is Li-Yorke chaotic if and only if $h^*(T) > 0$. Due to [9], there are only three possibilities for $T \in C(I)$, namely, $h^*(T)$ is either 0 or $\log 2$ or ∞ . These facts are shown in Table 1.

$h(T) > 0$	$h(T) = 0$		
type $\succ 2^\infty$ (chaotic)	type 2^∞ , chaotic	type 2^∞ , non-chaotic	type $\prec 2^\infty$ (non-chaotic)
$h^*(T) = \infty$	$h^*(T) = \log 2$	$h^*(T) = 0$	

TABLE 1. Supremum topological sequence entropy for interval maps

So, in the particular case $X = I$, we know the set

$$S(X) = \{h^*(T) : T \text{ is a continuous map } X \rightarrow X\}. \tag{1.3}$$

In the present paper we are interested in how this set can look like for nonempty compact metric spaces. By (1.2), $h^*(T) = \log n$ for some $n \in \mathbb{N}$ or $h^*(T) = \infty =: \log \infty$. Further, if T is a constant map or the identity then $h^*(T) = 0$. Therefore

$$\{0\} \subseteq S(X) \subseteq \{0, \log 2, \log 3, \dots\} \cup \{\infty\}.$$

The set $S(X)$ depends on X . Table 2 summarizes known results (here \mathbb{N} is the set of positive integers, $\mathbb{N}^* = \mathbb{N} \cup \{\infty\}$, $\mathbb{N}_k = \{1, \dots, k\}$, $\mathbb{N}_k^* = \{1, \dots, k\} \cup \{\infty\}$ and $\log M$ has obvious meaning for any $M \subseteq [1, \infty]$):

$S(X)$	$\log \mathbb{N}_1 = \{0\}$	$\log \mathbb{N}_2^* = \{0, \log 2\} \cup \{\infty\}$	$\log \mathbb{N}^* = \{0, \log 2, \log 3, \dots\} \cup \{\infty\}$
X	finite sets, zero-dimensional spaces with finite derived sets [48]	interval [9], circle [8], finite trees [42], finite graphs [43]	zero-dimensional spaces with infi- nite derived sets [42], some dendrites [42], manifolds of dimension ≥ 2 [42]

TABLE 2. Known values of $S(X)$

Since every dendrite is an absolute retract for the class of all compact metric spaces [7], we in fact have $S(X) = \log \mathbb{N}^*$ not only for the manifolds with dimension ≥ 2 , but for any compact metric space X containing the dendrite from [42].

Thus only three possibilities for $S(X)$ have been found so far: $\log \mathbb{N}_1$, $\log \mathbb{N}_2^*$ and $\log \mathbb{N}^*$. It is natural to ask whether these are the only possibilities for $S(X)$. In fact, at the beginning of our research we conjectured this. However, in the present paper we show that this is not the case. We completely solve the problem of finding all possibilities for $S(X)$ by proving the following theorem.

Theorem A (Main Theorem). *For every set $\{0\} \subseteq A \subseteq \log \mathbb{N}^*$ there exists a one-dimensional continuum $X_A \subseteq \mathbb{R}^3$ with $S(X_A) = A$.*

The information that X_A exists in \mathbb{R}^3 is superfluous since by Menger-Nöbeling theorem every m -dimensional compact metrizable space can be embedded in \mathbb{R}^{2m+1} . The formulation we use just indicates that we construct the 1-dimensional X_A already as a subspace of \mathbb{R}^3 .

As mentioned in Table 2, only for some dendrites X we know their set $S(X)$. However, it is obvious that for \mathfrak{c} -many sets A (\mathfrak{c} being the cardinality of the continuum), the required space X_A does not exist among dendrites. In fact, since every dendrite D can be retracted onto an interval $I \subseteq D$, we get that $S(D) \supseteq S(I) = \{0, \log 2, \infty\}$.

The proof is long and complicated. In fact, Main Theorem itself is repeated in Subsection 8 as Theorem 8.2 and a relatively short proof is given there; however, all the previous sections are a preparation for the proof.

Recall that the definition of $S(X)$, see (1.3), involves all continuous selfmaps of X . One can ask whether our Main Theorem still will be true if, instead of continuous maps, only *homeomorphisms* are considered. The answer is positive. If we denote

$$S_{\text{hom}}(X) = \{h^*(T) : T \text{ is a homeomorphism } X \rightarrow X\},$$

then the following is true.

Theorem B. *For every set $\{0\} \subseteq A \subseteq \log \mathbb{N}^*$ there exists a one-dimensional continuum $\tilde{X}_A \subseteq \mathbb{R}^3$ with $S_{\text{hom}}(\tilde{X}_A) = A$.*

The problem can be addressed also for *group actions*. If G is a topological group (with discrete topology) and Φ is an action (by homeomorphisms) of G on X , let $h^*(X, G, \Phi)$ be the supremum topological sequence entropy of this action; for definitions see Subsection 8.3. If we denote

$$S_G(X) = \{h^*(X, G, \Phi) : \Phi \text{ is an action of } G \text{ on } X\},$$

then we have the following theorem.

Theorem C. *Let G be a topological group such that there is a surjective group homomorphism $G \rightarrow \mathbb{Z}$. Then for every set $\{0\} \subseteq A \subseteq \log \mathbb{N}^*$ with A finite or $\infty \in A$, there exists a one-dimensional continuum $\tilde{X}_A \subseteq \mathbb{R}^3$ with $S_G(\tilde{X}_A) = A$. If in addition G is also finitely generated, then such a continuum exists for every set $\{0\} \subseteq A \subseteq \log \mathbb{N}^*$.*

So, the problem is solved for groups which have \mathbb{Z} as a quotient group (though some sets A are not covered if the group is not finitely generated). In full generality this problem remains open.

Such a theorem is true also for an analogous class of *semigroup actions* (by continuous maps). If P is a topological semigroup with identity (and with discrete topology), let $S_P(X)$ be the set of supremum topological sequence entropies of all P -actions on X . Then we have the following analogue of the previous theorem.

Theorem D. *Let P be a topological semigroup with identity such that there is a surjective semigroup homomorphism $P \rightarrow \mathbb{Z}_+$. Then for every set $\{0\} \subseteq A \subseteq \log \mathbb{N}^*$ with A finite or $\infty \in A$, there exists a one-dimensional continuum $X_A \subseteq \mathbb{R}^3$ with $S_P(X_A) = A$. If in addition P is also finitely generated, then such a continuum exists for every set $\{0\} \subseteq A \subseteq \log \mathbb{N}^*$.*

Section 9 contains several open problems related to the topic of this paper.

To work with supremum topological sequence entropy, we will use tools developed by David Kerr and Hanfeng Li in [30] and tools from [28]. Namely, to compute $h^*(T)$, we will use the formula (2.1) obtained by comparing the formula (1.2) with the characterization of sequence entropy tuples in terms of IN-tuples, which is due to Kerr and Li.

Last but not least, we wish to bring the attention of the reader to the remarkable fact that in the construction of the continua X_A and \tilde{X}_A we use amazing **Cook continua** studied in continuum theory since 1960's. Our paper is apparently the first application of these very rigid continua in dynamics. We believe that the way how we use them may turn out to be useful for producing some other examples and

counterexamples in dynamics and to solve some problems (including perhaps the problem of possible sets of values of topological entropy, see Question 9.5).

1.2. Rigid spaces, Cook continua and their applications. Roughly speaking, Cook continua are non-degenerate metric continua which are ‘everywhere’ rigid for continuous maps (the definition is given below). They are difficult to construct and were motivated by previously known examples of spaces rigid for homeomorphisms.

A nondegenerate space X is called *rigid for homeomorphisms* if the only homeomorphism $X \rightarrow X$ is the identity. De Groot and Wille [20] found such spaces in the class of one-dimensional Peano continua in 1958. An example of such a space is a disc with interiors of a dense family of propellers, with different numbers of blades, removed. Another example, attributed by them to de Iongh, is a dendrite with a dense set of branching points of different orders.

For a topological space X , let $H(X, X)$ be the group of all homeomorphisms of X onto X , the group operation being the composition. Given an abstract group G , does there exist a *topological group picture* of G , i.e. a space X such that $H(X, X)$ is isomorphic to G ? Due to de Groot [19], we know that the answer is affirmative. He showed that such a space X can always be found in the class of connected, locally connected, complete metric spaces of any positive dimension, as well as in the class of compact, connected, Hausdorff spaces. Note that in general the topological group picture X does not exist in the class of compact metric spaces because then the cardinality $\text{card } X \leq c$ while there are groups with arbitrarily large cardinalities. Let us also mention that if the group G is countable then X exists in the class of Peano continua, as shown already by de Groot and Wille [20].

A nondegenerate space X is *rigid for continuous maps*, or just rigid, if every continuous map $X \rightarrow X$ is either the identity or a constant map. A rigid metric continuum was constructed by Cook [12] in 1967. For a topological space X , let $C(X, X)$ be the monoid of all continuous maps of X into X , the semigroup operation being the composition (the unit element is the identity). Given an abstract monoid M , does there exist a space X such that $C(X, X)$ is isomorphic to M ? In general the answer is negative. The reason is that $C(X, X)$ contains all the constant maps (denote by const_a the constant map sending X to the point $a \in X$) and the constant maps are left zeros (left absorbing elements) of the monoid $C(X, X)$, i.e. $\text{const}_a \circ f = \text{const}_a$. However, monoids with many left zeros are rather special. In particular, the monoid $(C(X, X), \circ)$ is never isomorphic to $(\mathbb{Z}, +)$ (such a space X would be infinite, so $C(X, X)$ would have infinitely many left zeros, while $(\mathbb{Z}, +)$ has no left zero). What about the family $C(X, X) \setminus \{\text{const}_a : a \in X\}$? In general it is not closed under composition. Nevertheless, in some cases it is a monoid. Given an abstract monoid M , does there exist a space X such that $C(X, X) \setminus \{\text{const}_a : a \in X\}$ is a monoid isomorphic to M ?¹ Trnková proved that the answer is affirmative. She showed that such a space X always exists in the class of metric spaces [44] as well as in the class of compact Hausdorff spaces [44, 45]. In particular, the choice of the trivial monoid M gives the existence of a nondegenerate space rigid for continuous maps.

We mentioned that the first example of a rigid metric continuum was given by Cook [12] in 1967. In fact he constructed in that paper what is now usually called a Cook continuum (see the continuum M_1 in [12, Theorem 8], for a detailed description see [39, Appendix A]).

Definition 1.1. A Cook continuum \mathcal{C} is a nondegenerate metric continuum such that, for every subcontinuum K and every continuous map $f : K \rightarrow \mathcal{C}$, either f is constant (i.e. $f(K)$ is a singleton) or $f(x) = x$ for all $x \in K$ (hence $f(K) = K$).

The Cook continuum constructed in [12] is one-dimensional (and hereditarily indecomposable) and so it can be embedded into \mathbb{R}^3 , but it cannot be embedded into the plane because the construction uses solenoids, see [12, Note after Theorem 12]. A continuum is *planar* if it is embeddable into the plane. Maćkowiak constructed a Cook continuum in the plane, see [37, Corollary 6.2 and the discussion below it]. His continuum is arc-like (i.e. chainable, hence planar and non-separating), and hereditarily decomposable.

The fact that there exist spaces rigid for homeomorphisms and even for continuous maps (even Cook continua in the plane) is surprising. Such spaces are interesting for topologists as, in a sense, pathological objects. They are used in the theory of topological representations of algebraic objects, see [39]. Say, the de

¹This problem was posed by de Groot himself, at the Colloquium on Topology in Tihany, Hungary, in 1964.

Groot's result [19] that every group is isomorphic to the group of homeomorphisms of a (nice) metric space, can be proved as follows. After realizing that every group G is isomorphic to the automorphism group of some directed graph \mathcal{G} (where by a directed graph we mean a set, possibly infinite, with binary relation), one can replace the edges of \mathcal{G} by homeomorphic copies of a space Y rigid for homeomorphisms, obtaining in such a way a space X whose group $H(X, X)$ is isomorphic to G . Roughly speaking, we take copies of the same rigid space, place them along the edges of a directed graph and glue them at the points where two edges meet.

Can rigid spaces be useful in dynamics? It seems that so far they have been used in dynamics only either in a trivial way or as an inspiration for constructing spaces which are 'rigid-like' with respect to some dynamical property:

- *Rigid spaces used as counterexamples to naive questions.* For instance, one can be interested in whether every nondegenerate space/continuum X admits a continuous map $T: X \rightarrow X$ such that
 - there exists $x \in X$ whose omega-limit set is not a singleton;
 - there exists a scrambled pair for T (a question really discussed in [6, p. 353]);
 - the topological entropy of T is positive.

The existence of rigid continua shows that in all three cases the answer is negative.

- *Rigid spaces as inspiration for constructing spaces which are 'rigid-like' with respect to some dynamical property.* Say, in [13] a continuum X is constructed such that it is rigid-like with respect to minimality, meaning that $H(X, X) = \{T^n : n \in \mathbb{Z}\}$ where all T^n , $n \neq 0$, are minimal homeomorphisms and there is no other minimal continuous map $X \rightarrow X$. Being inspired by this, Akin and Rautio [2] consider compact metric spaces X such that every homeomorphism other than the identity is topologically transitive.

In particular, Cook continua are well known in the continuum theory as examples of 'very rigid' continua, but apparently they have not been used in topological dynamics yet. The reason is, perhaps, that one can hardly imagine that they could be really useful in topological dynamics, say for the purpose of constructing spaces admitting an interesting nontrivial dynamics. In the present paper we will controvert this by using them to prove our Main Theorem. To obtain required spaces X_A , we will use infinitely many pairwise disjoint nondegenerate subcontinua of a planar Cook continuum. We will build infinitely many blocks, usually obtained by gluing together (copies of) infinitely many appropriately chosen Cook continua from that infinite family, and then we will glue together those blocks in an appropriate way (in fact some blocks will not really be 'glued' with the rest of the space but, in spite of it, the whole space X_A will be a continuum).

1.3. Outline of the proof of Main Theorem. To make the life of the reader easier, we write this outline of the proof of our Main Theorem. As we have mentioned, we use Cook continua, in fact a countably infinite family of pairwise disjoint subcontinua of a fixed planar Cook continuum. For a moment denote this family by \mathcal{F} . The whole proof can be divided into 4 steps.

- **Step 1:** We prove the theorem for $A = \{0, \infty\}$ (this is done in Section 3 and Section 4, see Proposition 4.30).
- **Step 2:** We prove the theorem for $A = \{0, \log 2\}$ (this is done in Section 5 and Section 6, see Proposition 6.17).
- **Step 3:** We extend the result of Step 2 to the case $A = \{0, \log m\}$, for any integer $m \geq 3$ (see Section 7, Proposition 7.6). This is just an analogue of Step 2.

Each of the continua X_A , where A has cardinality 2 as above, is a disjoint union of two parts called the head and the snake of X_A . The snake has a first point and approaches the head (an analogue is the $\sin(1/x)$ continuum; of course, our continua X_A are much more complicated). Moreover, each of the above constructions depends on the choice of the family \mathcal{F} , more precisely, on the choice of *one* Cook continuum from \mathcal{F} which is used in the construction of the head and on the way how all the *other* Cook continua from \mathcal{F} are arranged into an injective sequence; they are used in the construction of the snake. When we say here that a Cook continuum is used in the construction of a space, we have in mind that a copy or many copies of this continuum are subsets of that space (by a copy we mean a homeomorphic copy).

Moreover, our constructions are such that if we fix the same family \mathcal{F} and we make the same choice of the mentioned one Cook continuum and the same way of arranging all the other Cook continua into an injective sequence, then the *snakes* are homeomorphic (but not equivalently embedded in \mathbb{R}^3).

Now split \mathcal{F} into infinitely many pairwise disjoint infinite families of continua. For a moment denote these families of Cook continua by $\mathcal{F}_\infty, \mathcal{F}_2, \mathcal{F}_3, \dots$ (for each of them also choose one Cook continuum and arrange all the other Cook continua into an injective sequence).

- **Step 4:** Once we know that Main Theorem is true whenever A has cardinality 2 (and is trivially true also when $A = \{0\}$), we finally prove it for arbitrary set $\{0\} \subseteq A \subseteq \log \mathbb{N}^*$ (see Section 8, Theorem 8.2) as follows. For every $k \in \mathbb{N}^* \setminus \{1\}$ put $A(k) = \{0, \log k\}$ and consider the continuum $X_{A(k)}$ constructed in one of the Steps 1,2,3, but now using building bricks from the family \mathcal{F}_k . Then choose, in \mathbb{R}^3 , a ‘central’ point and such copies of the continua $X_{A(k)}$ which are pairwise disjoint except that the chosen central point is the first point of the snakes of all considered continua $X_{A(k)}$. Moreover, we choose the copies of $X_{A(k)}$ such that the diameters of $X_{A(\infty)}, X_{A(1)}, X_{A(2)}, \dots$ tend to zero. Then the union of all $X_{A(k)}$ is a one-dimensional continuum which looks like a ‘flower’ with infinitely many smaller and smaller ‘petals’ (copies of the continua $X_{A(k)}$) intersecting at the chosen ‘central’ point. Given A with cardinality at least 3, we obtain the required X_A as the union of the petals which correspond to those $k \in \mathbb{N}^* \setminus \{1\}$ for which $\log k \in A$. The proof that $S(X_A) = A$ is not difficult and it takes only about one page. It uses the properties of the continua $X_{A(k)}$.

So, the most important and difficult parts are Step 1 and Step 2. We are going to present ideas behind them. Assume that \mathcal{F} is fixed, one Cook continuum $\mathcal{K} \in \mathcal{F}$ is chosen and $\mathcal{K}_1, \mathcal{K}_2, \dots$ is an injective sequence containing all the other Cook continua in \mathcal{F} .

In Step 1, to construct a continuum X with $S(X) = \{0, \infty\}$ we first construct a system (X_1, T) with

$$X_1 = \mathcal{K}_0 \sqcup C \quad \text{with} \quad C = \{x_1, x_2, \dots\}, \quad Tx_i = x_{i+1}, \quad i = 1, 2, \dots \quad \text{and} \quad T|_{\mathcal{K}_0} = Id|_{\mathcal{K}_0}.$$

Here \mathcal{K}_0 is a copy of $\mathcal{K} \in \mathcal{F}$; it will be the head of $X \supseteq X_1$. The trajectory x_1, x_2, \dots of T can be chosen in such a way that $h^*(T) = \infty$, see Section 3 for details. We think of \mathcal{K}_0 as lying in a vertical plane, the trajectory x_1, x_2, \dots approaches it from the right. For every m , we connect x_m and x_{m+1} by a properly chosen continuum D_m . For each m , $D_m = D_m^* \sqcup \{x_{m+1}\}$ where the sets D_m^* are of the form:

$$\begin{aligned} D_1^* &= \text{copy of } \mathcal{K}_1 \sqcup \text{copy of } \mathcal{K}_2 \sqcup \text{copy of } \mathcal{K}_3 \sqcup \text{copy of } \mathcal{K}_4 \sqcup \dots, \\ D_2^* &= \text{copy of } \mathcal{K}_2 \sqcup \text{copy of } \mathcal{K}_4 \sqcup \text{copy of } \mathcal{K}_6 \sqcup \text{copy of } \mathcal{K}_8 \sqcup \dots, \\ D_3^* &= \text{copy of } \mathcal{K}_4 \sqcup \text{copy of } \mathcal{K}_8 \sqcup \text{copy of } \mathcal{K}_{12} \sqcup \text{copy of } \mathcal{K}_{16} \sqcup \dots, \\ &\dots \end{aligned}$$

see Figure 4.3. The used Cook continua of the form ‘copy of \mathcal{K}_i ’ as well as the Cook continuum \mathcal{K}_0 are building ‘bricks’ of the continuum X defined by

$$X = \mathcal{K}_0 \sqcup \bigcup_{m=1}^{\infty} D_m = \mathcal{K}_0 \sqcup \bigsqcup_{m=1}^{\infty} D_m^*,$$

see Figure 4.4. The bricks in a set D_m^* form a sequence, each of them has the ‘first point’ and the ‘last point’ (see Section 4 for details), two consecutive bricks intersect at one point (the last point of one of them and the first point of the next one), otherwise they are disjoint. The consecutive continua D_m and D_{m+1} intersect at the point x_{m+1} , non-consecutive ones are disjoint.

One can show that X , defined as the disjoint union of the ‘head’ \mathcal{K}_0 and the ‘snake’ $\bigcup_{i=1}^{\infty} D_m$, is a one-dimensional continuum, see Lemma 4.2. It has the required property $S(X) = \{0, \infty\}$, see Proposition 4.30. The main steps in the proof of this fact are as follows.

First, in Lemma 4.6 we prove that if B is a brick then $F(B)$ is either a singleton or a brick homeomorphic to B , whenever $F : X \rightarrow X$ is a continuous map. Further, the definition of the sets D_i is such that if $m < M$ are positive integers then there is exactly one continuous surjective map of D_m onto D_M , but there is no surjective map of D_M onto D_m , see Lemma 4.14, Figure 4.5 and Remark 4.15. Already this fact and the fact that all the bricks in X are Cook continua, indicate that the continuum X does not admit ‘too many’ continuous selfmaps.

To study the dynamics of all possible continuous selfmaps of X we first define a particular continuous map $G : X \rightarrow X$, a continuous extension of the map $T : X_1 \rightarrow X_1$, with $h^*(G) = \infty$ (see Lemma 4.25; this map G sends each continuum D_m onto D_{m+1}). Further we show that if $F : X \rightarrow X$ is a non-constant continuous map, then there are only two possibilities, see Proposition 4.30. The first possibility is that the set of fixed points $\text{Fix}(F)$ of the (non-constant) map F is a ‘nice’ subcontinuum of X intersecting the snake and there is a positive integer N such that $F^N(X) = X$, whence $h^*(F) = 0$. The second possibility is that the (non-constant) map F has no fixed point in the snake and, for some positive integer N , the map F coincides with G^N on some neighbourhood of the head, which implies that $h^*(F) = \infty$.

In Step 2, the construction of a continuum $X \subseteq \mathbb{R}^3$ with $S(X) = \{0, \log 2\}$ is to some extent similar to that in Step 1, but necessarily there are also important differences and the situation is dramatically more complicated than in Step 1.

Again we start with an auxiliary system (X_1, T) , now with $h^*(T) = \log 2$, in the form of a disjoint union of two parts. Now the first part is not a Cook continuum with identity as in Step 1. Instead, it is a countable set $A = \{a_i, i \in \mathbb{Z}\} \cup \{a_\infty\}$ in the vertical plane above the point 0 on the horizontal axis, with $T(a_i) = a_{i+1}$, $i \in \mathbb{Z}$ and $T(a_\infty) = a_\infty$, see Figure 5.1. The second part of (X_1, T) is, similarly as in Step 1, just one trajectory x_0, x_1, \dots . This trajectory lies in $(0, 1] \times A$ with $T(x_i) = x_{i+1}$, approaching the first part ‘from the right’. Thus,

$$X_1 = A \sqcup \{x_0, x_1, \dots\}$$

with the dynamics given by the map T described above. By choosing the points x_i , $i = 0, 1, \dots$ carefully (this construction is long and complicated, see Section 5 for the details), we get $h^*(T) = \log 2$, see Theorem 5.5. Here one can see the first complication when compared with Step 1. Even if we restrict ourselves to spaces X_1 in the form of the disjoint union of a first part of X_1 and just one trajectory approaching it, it is much more easier to construct the system (X_1, T) in such a way that $h^*(T)$ is extremely large, i.e. equal to ∞ , than to construct it with $h^*(T)$ being exactly $\log 2$, neither larger nor smaller.

Further, similarly as in Step 1, we add Cook continua to get X in the form of the disjoint union of a head and a snake. In Step 1, the head of X was the same as the first part of X_1 , namely the Cook continuum \mathcal{K}_0 . Now we denote the head of X by \mathcal{A}_0 and in Section 6 we construct it, in the vertical plane containing A , by joining the consecutive points of A by copies of the chosen Cook continuum from \mathcal{F} , see shaded continua in Figure 6.1. These copies are in fact taken such that each of them is obtained from any other one by a direct similitude, to keep the geometry of X under control (this will be useful later). So, the head of X looks like a necklace of similar copies of the same Cook continuum, together with the point a_∞ . Topologically, the snake is obtained from $\{x_0, x_1, \dots\}$ in the same way as in Step 1, so the snake is homeomorphic to that from Step 1 and we have

$$X = \text{head} \sqcup \text{snake} = \mathcal{A}_0 \sqcup (\text{snake homeomorphic to that from Step 1}).$$

However, the two snakes have different positions in \mathbb{R}^3 , meaning that they are not equivalently embedded in \mathbb{R}^3 . We have to be careful with the construction because we want X to be a compact space (i.e., we want that all the cluster points of the snake which lie in the vertical plane containing the head, belong to the head). With some care, the snake can indeed be placed in \mathbb{R}^3 in such a way that X is compact (in fact a one-dimensional continuum), see Lemma 6.1.

Similarly as in Step 1, in Subsection 6.3 we extend the map $T : X_1 \rightarrow X_1$ to a particular map $G : X \rightarrow X$ (we of course want that $h^*(G) = \log 2$). The map G on our snake is just the unique map topologically conjugate to the map G we defined on the snake in Step 1. Further, G sends each Cook continuum in the ‘necklace’ \mathcal{A}_0 onto the next one. Unfortunately, while in Step 1 the particular map G was trivially continuous on X and $h^*(G) = \infty$, now we are facing two problems. First, the restrictions of G to the head and to the snake are clearly continuous but contrary to Step 1, now these two continuous parts of G need to fit together to produce a continuous map on X . Further, while it is trivial that $h^*(G) \geq h^*(T) = \log 2$, this inequality alone does not imply that $h^*(G) = \log 2$. (In Step 1 we were in better situation, since there $h^*(G) \geq h^*(T) = \infty$ trivially implied that $h^*(G) = \infty$.) To cope with these two problems, we specify the geometry of X in more details, by adding some additional requirements to our construction of X . For the details see Subsection 6.4. Then finally X is as we need. In Lemma 6.6 we prove that G on such a continuum X is continuous and in Lemma 6.9, using Lemma 6.8, we prove that $h^*(G) = \log 2$. Though only snakes

in Step 1 and Step 2 are homeomorphic (while the heads are not), analogous arguments as in Step 1 then easily give that $S(X) = \{0, \log 2\}$, see Proposition 6.17.

Organization of the paper. In Section 2 we introduce some notions and facts that will be used in the paper. In Section 3 we construct systems with zero topological entropy but infinite supremum topological sequence entropy. In Section 4, based on an example from Section 3, we construct a continuum X with $S(X) = \{0, \infty\}$. Then in Sections 5 and 6 we construct a continuum X with $S(X) = \{0, \log 2\}$. For a generalization of these two Sections from $\log 2$ to $\log m$ see Section 7. Finally, the proof of our Main Theorem is given in Section 8. Also for the proofs of Theorems B, C and D see Section 8. Readers interested in open problems should consult Section 9.

Acknowledgments. This project was started when the first two authors visited Max Planck Institute for Mathematics, Bonn, in 2009. Much of the work on the project was done also when the first author visited USTC, Hefei in 2011 and 2016 and when the third author visited Matej Bel University in 2018. The authors thank all these institutions for the warm hospitality and financial supports.

Snoha was supported by the Slovak Research and Development Agency under the contract No. APVV-15-0439 and by VEGA grant 1/0786/15. Ye was supported by NNSF of China (11371339 and 11431012). Zhang was supported by the NNSF of China (11871188 and 11671094).

The authors thank Jerzy Krzemppek for providing them with the reference [37], where the existence of Cook continua in the plane is proved. This enabled the authors to simplify the geometry of their constructions.

Sincere thanks of the authors go to Hanfeng Li for his comments on the preliminary version of the paper, which resulted in the homeomorphism case in Subsection 8.2, the group actions and the semigroup actions cases in Subsection 8.3, and an open problem in Subsection 9.6.

2. PRELIMINARIES FROM DYNAMICS AND TOPOLOGY

In this section we introduce some related notions from topological dynamics and topology.

2.1. Topological sequence entropy, sequence entropy tuples. Let (X, T) be a t.d.s. Recall that a set $Y \subseteq X$ is called T -invariant if $T(Y) \subseteq Y$.

The topological entropy of T , the topological sequence entropy of T with respect to a subsequence A of \mathbb{Z}_+ and the maximal pattern entropy of T are denoted by $h(T)$, $h^A(T)$ and $h^*(T)$ respectively. To recall the definition of $h^A(T)$, let $A = \{a_0 < a_1 < \dots\}$ be a sequence of nonnegative integers. Given an open cover \mathcal{U} of X , define

$$h^A(T, \mathcal{U}) = \limsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \log \mathcal{N} \left(\bigvee_{i=0}^{n-1} T^{-a_i}(\mathcal{U}) \right),$$

$\mathcal{N}(\mathcal{V})$ being the minimal possible cardinality of a subcover chosen from a cover \mathcal{V} . Then

$$h^A(T) = \sup \{ h^A(T, \mathcal{U}) : \mathcal{U} \text{ is an open cover of } X \}.$$

Note that $h^A(T)$ becomes $h(T)$ for $A = \mathbb{Z}_+$. As already said in Introduction, for the maximal pattern entropy of T we have $h^*(T) = \sup_A h^A(T)$, where A is ranging over all subsequences of \mathbb{Z}_+ , see [28] and therefore we will call $h^*(T)$ also the supremum topological sequence entropy of T .

Recall that a t.d.s. (X, T) is *null* if the sequence entropy is zero for all subsequences, i.e. if $h^*(T) = 0$, and it is *tame* if its enveloping semigroup is Fréchet (a topological space is *Fréchet* if for any $A \subseteq X$ and any $x \in \overline{A}$ there is a sequence $\{x_n\}$ with $A \ni x_n \rightarrow x$).

Let us state some properties for null systems. For a measure preserving system (X, \mathcal{B}, μ, T) we can define entropy or sequence entropy with respect to μ . It is a classical result [33] that a measure preserving system (X, \mathcal{B}, μ, T) is null if and only if it has discrete spectrum. It is known [24] that if (X, T) is a minimal system and $h^*(T) = 0$, then $\pi : X \rightarrow X_{eq}$ (the factor map to the maximal equicontinuous factor) is an almost one-to-one extension, (X, T) is uniquely ergodic and π is also an isomorphism (in the measurable sense). Recently, the structure of a minimal null system under group actions is determined by Glasner [16]. See [35, 15, 25] for other results related to nullness and sequence entropy.

The notion of a (sequence) entropy tuple of length n was defined in [4, 27, 24]. An n -tuple $(x_i)_{i=1}^n \in X^n$, $n \geq 2$, is called a *sequence entropy n -tuple* for (X, T) if at least two points in $(x_i)_{i=1}^n$ are different and for any disjoint closed neighborhoods $\{U_1, \dots, U_t\}$ of $\{x_{j_1}, \dots, x_{j_t}\} = \{x_1, \dots, x_n\}$, there exists an increasing sequence $A \subseteq \mathbb{Z}_+$ ($A = \mathbb{Z}_+$ in case of entropy tuples) such that

$$h^A(T, \{U_1^c, \dots, U_t^c\}) > 0,$$

where $2 \leq t \leq n$ and $x_{j_p} \neq x_{j_k}$ when $p \neq k$.

The set of entropy tuples and sequence entropy tuples of length n will be denoted by $E_n(X, T)$ and $SE_n(X, T)$ respectively. A tuple is said to be a pair if $n = 2$. Instead of $E_2(X, T)$ and $SE_2(X, T)$ we write $E(X, T)$ and $SE(X, T)$, respectively. Note that the maximal zero entropy factor (resp. null factor) of a topological dynamical system is induced by the smallest closed invariant equivalence relation containing $E_2(X, T)$ (resp. $SE_2(X, T)$), see [4] and [24].

Originally, entropy and sequence entropy tuples were defined using open covers. We will not use the original definitions but we are going to state equivalent definitions given in [30] using the following notion of independence.

Definition 2.1. Let (X, T) be a t.d.s. and $\tilde{A} = (A_1, \dots, A_k)$ be a tuple of subsets of X . We say that a subset $J \subseteq \mathbb{Z}_+$ is an *independence set* for \tilde{A} if for any nonempty finite subset $I \subseteq J$, we have

$$\bigcap_{i \in I} T^{-i} A_{s(i)} \neq \emptyset$$

for any $s \in \{1, \dots, k\}^I$. If such a set J is finite and has p elements, we also say that it is an *independence set*, or *independence set of times*, of length p .

Remark 2.2. Note that J in this definition is also an independence set for any sub-tuple of \tilde{A} . Also, a subset of an independence set for \tilde{A} is again an independence set for \tilde{A} .

Remark 2.3. In a natural way we will use this terminology also in the following slightly more general situation. Suppose that $Y \subseteq X$ and $S : Y \rightarrow X$. Let $\tilde{A} = (A_1, \dots, A_k)$ be a tuple of subsets of X and $J \subseteq \mathbb{Z}_+$. By saying that J is an *independence set for \tilde{A} for the map S* , we will mean that for any nonempty finite subset $I \subseteq J$ and any map $s : I \rightarrow \{1, \dots, k\}$ we have $\bigcap_{i \in I} S^{-i} A_{s(i)} \neq \emptyset$, i.e. there is a point $y \in Y$ such that, for every $i \in I$, $S^i(y) \in X$ exists and $S^i(y) \in A_{s(i)}$. In particular, if such a map S is then extended to a continuous map $T : X \rightarrow X$ (note that Y is not necessarily T -invariant), obviously J will be an independence set for \tilde{A} for the t.d.s. (X, T) .

In [30] the authors defined IE-tuples, IT-tuples and IN-tuples (here I, E, T and N stand for independent, entropy, tame and null, respectively). Though we use only IN-tuples, for completeness recall the three definitions.

Definition 2.4. Consider a tuple $\tilde{x} = (x_1, \dots, x_k) \in X^k$. If for every product neighborhood $U_1 \times \dots \times U_k$ of \tilde{x} the tuple (U_1, \dots, U_k) has an independence set of positive density or an infinite independence set or arbitrarily long finite independence sets, then the tuple \tilde{x} is called an *IE-tuple* or an *IT-tuple* or an *IN-tuple*, respectively.

Notice that for tuples we have $IE \Rightarrow IT \Rightarrow IN$. Recall that a tuple $(x_i)_{i=1}^n$ is called *intrinsic* if $x_i \neq x_j$ when $i \neq j$ and *diagonal* if all its entries are equal.

The following theorem gives the promised equivalent definitions of entropy tuples and sequence entropy tuples from [30] (see also [27] and [23]).

Theorem 2.5. Let (X, T) be a t.d.s.

- (1) A tuple is an *entropy tuple* if and only if it is a non-diagonal IE-tuple. In particular, a system (X, T) has zero entropy if and only if every IE-pair is diagonal.
- (2) A tuple is a *sequence entropy tuple* if and only if it is a non-diagonal IN-tuple. In particular, a system (X, T) is null if and only if every IN-pair is diagonal.
- (3) (X, T) is *tame* if and only if every IT-pair is diagonal.

We remark that (1) was proved by Huang and Ye [27] using the notion of an interpolating set (which was first used by Glasner and Weiss [17] in the symbolic setting), one half of (3) was proved by Huang in [23] using the notion of a scrambled pair and (1-3) were showed by Kerr and Li [30] using the notion of independence.

Comparing (1.2) with Theorem 2.5(2), we get that

$$h^*(T) = \sup\{\log k : \text{there is an intrinsic IN-tuple of length } k\} . \quad (2.1)$$

Throughout the paper, this formula will be used to compute $h^*(T)$. Just for completeness, we add one formula more. Recall that a set $A \subseteq X$ is called a *sequence entropy set* if every non-diagonal tuple from A is a sequence entropy tuple, and it is *maximal* if it is maximal with respect to the inclusion. Comparing this terminology with (1.2), we get that

$$h^*(T) = \sup\{\log \#A : A \text{ is a sequence entropy set}\} . \quad (2.2)$$

Let (Y, S) and (X, T) be t.d.s. If there is a surjective continuous map π from Y to X such that $\pi \circ S = T \circ \pi$ then we say that (X, T) is a *factor* of (Y, S) and (Y, S) is an *extension* of (X, T) . The direct product of n copies of X is denoted by X^n and the direct product of n copies of the map T by $T^{(n)}$. Let $IE_n(X, T)$, $IN_n(X, T)$ and $IT_n(X, T)$ be the families of all IE-tuples, IN-tuples and IT-tuples, respectively, of length n . Below, let $P_n(X, T)$ be one of them, i.e. P is one of IE , IN , IT . The set of non-wandering points of T is denoted by $\Omega(T)$.

Proposition 2.6. *Let (X, T) and (Y, S) be t.d.s. and let $\pi : (Y, S) \rightarrow (X, T)$ be a factor map. Then*

- (a) $P_n(X, T)$ is a closed $T^{(n)}$ -invariant subset of X^n .
- (b) (1) If $(x_i)_{i=1}^n \in P_n(X, T)$, then for all $1 \leq i \leq n$ there exists $y_i \in Y$ such that $\pi(y_i) = x_i$ and $(y_i)_{i=1}^n \in P_n(Y, S)$.
- (2) If $(y_i)_{i=1}^n \in P_n(Y, S)$, then $(\pi(y_i))_{i=1}^n \in P_n(X, T)$.
- (c) If $(x_i)_{i=1}^n \in P_n(X, T)$ then $x_i \in \Omega(T)$ for each $1 \leq i \leq n$.
- (d) $P_n(X, T) = P_n(X, T^k)$ for any $k \in \mathbb{N}$.

Proof. (a) and (b) can be found in [4], [27] and [30], (c) and (d) can be proved directly by definition. \square

Proposition 2.7. *Let (X, T) be a t.d.s.*

- (a) $h^*(T) = h^*(T|_{T(X)})$.
- (b) Let T be an injective map and $(a_i)_{i=1}^n \in P_n(X, T)$. Then each of the points a_i has a (unique) preimage and $(T^{-1}a_i)_{i=1}^n \in P_n(X, T)$. So, $P_n(X, T)$ is a $(T^{-1})^{(n)}$ -invariant subset of X^n .

Proof. (a). Clearly, every intrinsic IN-tuple of $G = T|_{T(X)}$ is also an IN-tuple for T . Conversely, let (x_1, \dots, x_n) be an IN-tuple for T . We show that it is also an IN-tuple for G . Due to Proposition 2.6(c), all the points x_i lie in $T(X)$. For every i , let V_i be a neighbourhood of x_i in the topology of $T(X)$, i.e. $V_i = U_i \cap T(X)$ for some neighbourhood U_i of x_i in the topology of X . Given k , we are going to show that for the neighbourhoods V_1, \dots, V_n there is an independence set J of times of length k for the map G . Since (x_1, \dots, x_n) is an IN-tuple for T , there is an independence set J^* of times of length $k+1$ for the neighbourhoods U_1, \dots, U_n and the map T . This means that for any choice of indices $s(i) \in \{1, \dots, n\}$, $i \in J^*$, there is a point $x \in X$ such that $T^i(x) \in U_{s(i)}$. Now let J be the set of (nonnegative) times of length k obtained from J^* by removing the smallest element of J^* and subtracting 1 from every other element. Since $T(x) \in T(X)$ and $T^{i-1}(T(x)) \in U_{s(i)} \cap T(X) = V_{s(i)}$ for any $i \in J^*$ which is greater than zero, we see that J has the required properties.

(b) Again, since $\Omega(T) \subseteq T(X)$, Proposition 2.6(c) gives that $a_i \in T(X)$, $i = 1, \dots, n$. So, the tuple $(T^{-1}a_i)_{i=1}^n$ is well defined.

Consider any tuple of open neighbourhoods $(U(T^{-1}a_i))_{i=1}^n$ (here $U(T^{-1}a_i)$ is a neighbourhood of $T^{-1}a_i$). Since $T : X \rightarrow T(X)$, being a continuous bijection between compact metric spaces, is a homeomorphism, for every i we get that the set $V(a_i) := T(U(T^{-1}a_i))$ is an open neighbourhood of a_i in the topology of $T(X)$ and so $V(a_i) = W(a_i) \cap T(X)$ for some open neighbourhood $W(a_i)$ of a_i in the topology of X .

So, for any tuple of open neighbourhoods $(U(T^{-1}a_i))_{i=1}^n$ there is a tuple of open neighbourhoods $(W(a_i))_{i=1}^n$ such that $T(U(T^{-1}a_i)) \subseteq W(a_i)$ for every i . No matter whether P is IE , IN or IT , to finish the proof of (b) it is sufficient to prove the following implication (cf. Definition 2.4):

$$\begin{aligned} \{t(1) < t(2) < t(3) < \dots\} \text{ is a (finite or infinite) independence set of times for } (W(a_i))_{i=1}^n &\implies \\ \implies \{t(2) - 1, t(3) - 1, \dots\} \text{ is an independence set of times for } (U(T^{-1}a_i))_{i=1}^n &\end{aligned} \quad (2.3)$$

So, fix such a set $J_W = \{t(1) < t(2) < t(3) < \dots\}$ (i.e., $t(1)$ is perhaps zero but $t(i) \geq 1$ for $i \geq 2$). To prove that $J_U = \{t(2) - 1, t(3) - 1, \dots\}$ is an independence set of times for $(U(T^{-1}a_i))_{i=1}^n$, fix a nonempty finite subset $I_U \subseteq J_U$ and a function $s : I_U \rightarrow \{1, \dots, n\}$. We want to find a point $x_s \in X$ such that for every $t(i) - 1 \in I_U$ (note that then $i \geq 2$) we have $T^{t(i)-1}(x_s) \in U(T^{-1}a_{s(t(i)-1)})$. Since $I_W = \{t(i) : t(i) - 1 \in I_U\}$ is a finite subset of J_W and J_W is an independence set of times for $(W(a_i))_{i=1}^n$, there is a point $z \in X$ such that $T^{t(i)}(z) \in W(a_{s(t(i)-1)})$ for every $t(i) \in I_W$. However, for $t(i) \in I_W$ we have $i \geq 2$, whence $t_i \geq 1$ and so $T^{t(i)}(z) \in T(X)$. The last two inclusions give that $T^{t(i)}(z) \in W(a_{s(t(i)-1)}) \cap T(X) = V(a_{s(t(i)-1)}) = T(U(T^{-1}a_{s(t(i)-1)}))$. Hence $T^{t(i)-1}(z) \in U(T^{-1}a_{s(t(i)-1)})$ and so the choice $x_s = z$ finishes the proof of the implication (2.3). \square

Remark 2.8. In connection with Proposition 2.7(a), be careful. It is not already true that $h^A(T) = h^A(T|_{\Omega(T)})$ and $h^*(T) = h^*(T|_{\Omega(T)})$. See also Remark 3.2.

2.2. Retracts, chains in connected spaces, continua, Cook continua in the plane. Throughout the paper, if a space Y is homeomorphic to a space X , we say that Y is a (homeomorphic) copy of X . Given a space X and its subspace $Y \subseteq X$, a continuous map $r : X \rightarrow Y$ is called a *retraction* if the restriction $r|_Y$ is the identity. Then $Y = r(X)$ is called a *retract* of X . A compact metric space Y is called an *absolute retract* for the class of all compact metric spaces (in what follows we will sometimes shortly say ‘‘absolute retract’’) if for any compact metric space Z , whenever (a copy of) Y is a subspace of Z , (this copy of) Y is a retract of Z .

A classical result of Borsuk [7, Corollary 13.5, p. 138] says that each dendrite is an absolute retract and that there are no other one-dimensional compact metric spaces which are absolute retracts. In particular, any arc is an absolute retract (other examples of absolute retracts are the n -dimensional cubes, $n \geq 1$, and the Hilbert cube).

Every connected space has the property that every two points can be joined by an ε -chain of points, see e.g. [47, p.13]. We will use the following modification of this fact.

Lemma 2.9. *Let M be a nondegenerate connected metric space with a metric ϱ , D be a dense subset of M and $a, b \in M$. Let $\varepsilon > 0$. Then there is a positive integer n such that a and b can be joined by an ε -chain of points of length $n + 2$ lying (with possible exceptions of the points a and b) in D , i.e. there is a finite chain $a = c_0, c_1, c_2, \dots, c_n, c_{n+1} = b$ with c_1, c_2, \dots, c_n in $D \setminus \{a, b\}$ and $\varrho(c_i, c_{i+1}) < \varepsilon$ for every $i = 0, \dots, n$. The set of such n 's is in fact cofinite.*

Proof. Let M_a be the set of all points $x \in M$ such that a can be joined with x by such a chain (with n depending on x). Since D is dense, the set M_a is nonempty (it contains a because there is an ε -chain a, c_1, a with $c_1 \in D \setminus \{a\}$) and it is easily seen that M_a is both open and closed. Hence $M_a = M$ and so $b \in M_a$. By repeating the point c_n one can see that the lengths of ε -chains joining a and b form a cofinite set (by small perturbations, one can even construct such chains consisting of pairwise different points, with possible exception of the endpoints a and b , provided they coincide). \square

Recall that, throughout the paper, a *continuum* is a nonempty compact connected metric space. Thus a singleton is a continuum. However, we will be interested in nondegenerate continua. A nondegenerate continuum has cardinality \mathfrak{c} (in fact, every nonempty perfect Polish space has cardinality \mathfrak{c}).

The following is Boundary Bumping Theorem, see e.g. [38, Theorem 5.4].

Theorem 2.10. *Let X be a continuum, and let U be a nonempty, proper, open subset of X . If K is a component of \overline{U} , then K intersects the boundary of U (equivalently, since $K \subseteq \overline{U}$ and U is open, K intersects $X \setminus U$).*

From this we get the following fact, see e.g. [38, Corollary 5.5].

Lemma 2.11. *If X is a nondegenerate metric continuum then for every open set $\emptyset \neq U \subseteq X$ there is a nondegenerate continuum $K \subseteq U$.*

We say that two continua are *comparable by continuous maps* if one of them can be continuously mapped onto the other. Otherwise, they are *incomparable by continuous maps*.

Lemma 2.12. (1) *A nondegenerate metric continuum is a Cook continuum if and only if it has the property that no two different nondegenerate subcontinua of it are comparable by continuous maps.*
 (2) *Every nondegenerate subcontinuum of a Cook continuum is a Cook continuum.*
 (3) *If two Cook continua \mathcal{C}_1 and \mathcal{C}_2 are homeomorphic, then they are uniquely homeomorphic, i.e. there exists a unique homeomorphism $\varphi: \mathcal{C}_1 \rightarrow \mathcal{C}_2$. Moreover, if $\sigma: \mathcal{C}_1 \rightarrow \mathcal{C}_2$ is a continuous surjection then $\sigma = \varphi$.*

Proof. (1) If \mathcal{C} is a Cook continuum then it clearly has that property. Conversely, let a nondegenerate metric continuum C have that property. Let K be a subcontinuum of C and $f: K \rightarrow C$ be continuous such that the continuum $f(K)$ is not a singleton. By the property, $f(K) = K$. To prove that C is a Cook continuum, we show that $g := f|_K$ is the identity. From now on we work in the topology of K . Suppose, on the contrary, that a point $b \in K$ is not fixed for g . Choose a g -preimage a of b . So, $a \neq b$ and $g(a) = b \neq g(b)$. By continuity and Lemma 2.11, there is a continuum $A \subseteq K$ such that A contains a but not b and $g(A)$ contains b but not a . Due to the property, the continuum $g(A)$ has to be degenerate, so $g(A) = \{b\}$. The closed set $g^{-1}(b)$ contains A and is disjoint from $\{b\}$. Let U be an open neighbourhood (recall that in the topology of K) of $g^{-1}(b)$ such that $b \notin \overline{U}$. Let K^* be that component of \overline{U} which contains the continuum A . By Theorem 2.10, K^* contains a point $c \in K \setminus U$. Then the continuum $f(K^*) = g(K^*)$ contains both b and $g(c) \neq b$ and so is both different from K^* and nondegenerate. This contradicts the property.

(2) A subcontinuum of a continuum is a continuum. So, (2) follows from the definition or from (1).

(3) If also $\psi: \mathcal{C}_1 \rightarrow \mathcal{C}_2$ is a homeomorphism, then $\psi^{-1} \circ \varphi$ is a homeomorphism of \mathcal{C}_1 onto \mathcal{C}_1 and since \mathcal{C}_1 is a Cook continuum, it is the identity, whence $\varphi = \psi$. If $\sigma: \mathcal{C}_1 \rightarrow \mathcal{C}_2$ is a continuous surjection then $\varphi^{-1} \circ \sigma$ is a continuous surjection $\mathcal{C}_1 \rightarrow \mathcal{C}_1$ and, since \mathcal{C}_1 is a Cook continuum, it is the identity. Hence $\sigma = \varphi$. \square

Cook continua are known to be at most two-dimensional, hereditarily indecomposable Cook continua are always one-dimensional, see e.g. the very end of [31] and references therein, cf. [32]. Though the planar Cook continuum constructed by Maćkowiak [37] is hereditarily decomposable, it is still one-dimensional. This is even because of the following trivial reason.

Lemma 2.13. *Every Cook continuum \mathcal{C} in \mathbb{R}^2 (even every rigid space $\mathcal{C} \subseteq \mathbb{R}^2$) is one-dimensional.*

Proof. Let $\mathcal{C} \subseteq \mathbb{R}^2$ be rigid. Then \mathcal{C} is not zero-dimensional, since a disconnected space obviously admits a continuous selfmap whose range consists of two points. So, \mathcal{C} is at least one-dimensional. However, it is not two-dimensional, otherwise, see e.g. [29, Theorem IV.3], it properly contains a 2-dimensional cube and since the cube is an absolute retract for the class of all compact metric spaces, there is a continuous retraction of \mathcal{C} onto that cube, a contradiction with rigidity of \mathcal{C} . \square

Lemma 2.14. *Let \mathcal{Q} be a planar Cook continuum. Then there exist planar Cook continua*

$$\mathcal{K}_0, \mathcal{K}_1, \mathcal{K}_2, \dots, \tag{2.4}$$

in fact pairwise disjoint subcontinua of \mathcal{Q} , with the following properties for every $i, j = 0, 1, \dots$

- (a) *Whenever $K \subseteq \mathcal{K}_i$ is a continuum and $g: K \rightarrow \mathcal{K}_i$ is continuous, then g is constant or identity.*
- (b) *Whenever $K \subseteq \mathcal{K}_i$ is a continuum and $f: K \rightarrow \mathcal{K}_j$, $i \neq j$, is continuous, then f is constant (in particular, \mathcal{K}_i and \mathcal{K}_j are incomparable by continuous maps and hence non-homeomorphic).*

Proof. Since there is an infinite family of pairwise disjoint nonempty open sets in \mathcal{Q} , Lemma 2.11 shows that in \mathcal{Q} there are pairwise disjoint nondegenerate subcontinua $\mathcal{K}_0, \mathcal{K}_1, \mathcal{K}_2, \dots$. By Lemma 2.12(2) they are Cook continua, hence (a). To prove (b), fix nonnegative integers $i \neq j$, a nondegenerate subcontinuum $K \subseteq \mathcal{K}_i$ (if K is a singleton, the claim is trivial) and a continuous map $f: K \rightarrow \mathcal{K}_j$. Then f can be viewed as

a continuous map $K \rightarrow \mathcal{Q}$ and so f is either constant or identity. However, the latter possibility is excluded, because \mathcal{K}_i and \mathcal{K}_j are disjoint. \square

The following fact is now obvious, but it will be needed below and therefore we state it explicitly.

Corollary 2.15. *Replace the continua $\mathcal{K}_0, \mathcal{K}_1, \mathcal{K}_2, \dots$ in (2.4) by homeomorphic copies $\widetilde{\mathcal{K}}_0, \widetilde{\mathcal{K}}_1, \widetilde{\mathcal{K}}_2, \dots$ of them, respectively. Then these new continua are still Cook continua (embeddable into the plane) and they still have the following properties.*

- (\tilde{a}) *Whenever $\widetilde{K} \subseteq \widetilde{\mathcal{K}}_i$ is a continuum and $\tilde{g} : \widetilde{K} \rightarrow \widetilde{\mathcal{K}}_i$ is continuous, then \tilde{g} is constant or identity.*
- (\tilde{a}) *Let $\widetilde{\mathcal{K}}_i$ be a copy of \mathcal{K}_i , possibly different from \mathcal{K}_i . Whenever $\widetilde{K} \subseteq \widetilde{\mathcal{K}}_i$ is a continuum and $\tilde{g} : \widetilde{K} \rightarrow \widetilde{\mathcal{K}}_i$ is continuous, then \tilde{g} is either constant or a homeomorphism $\widetilde{K} \rightarrow \tilde{g}(\widetilde{K})$.*
- (\tilde{b}) *Whenever $\widetilde{K} \subseteq \widetilde{\mathcal{K}}_i$ is a continuum and $\tilde{f} : \widetilde{K} \rightarrow \widetilde{\mathcal{K}}_j$, $i \neq j$, is continuous, then \tilde{f} is constant (in particular, $\widetilde{\mathcal{K}}_i$ and $\widetilde{\mathcal{K}}_j$ are incomparable by continuous maps and hence non-homeomorphic).*

The following simple fact will be used in Section 6 for Cook continua in the plane.

Lemma 2.16. *Let C be a continuum in \mathbb{R}^n and V an open set containing C . Then each two points of C can be joined by a polygonal arc in V .*

Proof. Each two points of a connected open set U in \mathbb{R}^n can be joined by a polygonal arc in U , see e.g. [22, Theorem 3-5]. However, V does contain a connected open set U such that $C \subseteq U \subseteq V$. \square

3. SYSTEMS WITH ZERO ENTROPY AND INFINITE SUPREMUM SEQUENCE ENTROPY

As already mentioned in Introduction, $h(T) > 0$ implies $h^*(T) = \infty$. What can be said on the supremum sequence entropy $h^*(T)$ if $h(T) = 0$? As we know from [8, 9, 43, 42], if the phase space X is a unit interval or a unit circle or a finite graph, then $h(T) = 0$ implies that $h^*(T)$ is *finite* (zero or $\log 2$). However, in general a space X can admit a continuous selfmap T with $h(T) = 0$ and $h^*(T) = \infty$. The next subsection is devoted to the construction of such an example. It will be helpful in the next section.

If A and B are disjoint sets, $A \cup B$ will sometimes be denoted by $A \sqcup B$. We will also use the notations

$$1/\mathbb{N} = \{1/n : n \in \mathbb{N}\} \quad \text{and} \quad 1/\mathbb{N}^{\uparrow k} = \{1/n : n = k, k+1, \dots\}, \quad k \in \mathbb{N}.$$

Further, Id_A denotes the identity on A .

3.1. A map $T : X_1 \rightarrow X_1$ with $h(T) = 0$ and $h^*(T) = \infty$. We are going to define such a map on a space which differs from a prescribed continuum \mathcal{C}_0 by one orbit only.

Start by fixing any nondegenerate metric continuum \mathcal{C} with metric ϱ and a countable dense set $E = \{e^1, e^2, \dots\} \subseteq \mathcal{C}$. Our space X_1 will be a subset of $(\{0\} \cup 1/\mathbb{N}) \times \mathcal{C}$ endowed with the maximum metric (we have the Euclidean metric in the first coordinate and the metric ϱ in the second coordinate). For $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and $i \in \mathbb{N}$, put $\mathcal{C}_0 = \{0\} \times \mathcal{C}$, $\mathcal{C}_n = \{1/n\} \times \mathcal{C}$, $E_0 = \{0\} \times E$, $e_0^i = \{0\} \times \{e^i\}$, $E_n = \{1/n\} \times E$, $e_n^i = \{1/n\} \times \{e^i\}$. Let $P_1 : \bigsqcup_{n=0}^{\infty} \mathcal{C}_n \rightarrow \{0\} \cup 1/\mathbb{N}$ and $P_2 : \bigsqcup_{n=0}^{\infty} \mathcal{C}_n \rightarrow \mathcal{C}$ be the projections onto the first and the second coordinates.

The set $X_1 \subseteq \mathcal{C}_0 \sqcup \bigsqcup_{n=1}^{\infty} \mathcal{C}_n$ will be of the form

$$X_1 = \mathcal{C}_0 \sqcup C \quad \text{with} \quad C = \{x_1, x_2, \dots\} \subseteq (1/\mathbb{N}) \times E. \quad (3.1)$$

Define $T : X_1 \rightarrow X_1$ by

$$T|_{\mathcal{C}_0} = \text{Id}_{\mathcal{C}_0} \quad \text{and} \quad T(x_n) = x_{n+1}. \quad (3.2)$$

Then the set C and the sequence $(x_n)_{n=1}^{\infty}$ are the orbit and the trajectory (under T) of the point x_1 .

So, we only need to choose the points x_n for all ‘times’ n (we want compactness of X_1 , continuity of T , $h(T) = 0$ and $h^*(T) = \infty$). We will do it step by step, for *blocks of times*

$$\{1, 2, \dots, k_1\}, \{k_1 + 1, k_1 + 2, \dots, k_2\}, \dots, \{k_{n-1} + 1, k_{n-1} + 2, \dots, k_n\}, \dots \quad (3.3)$$

where the integers $1 < k_1 < k_2 < \dots$ are not specified yet. The pieces of trajectory corresponding to the blocks of times in (3.3) (and only to these blocks of times) will be conveniently called *blocks (of trajectory)*. For simplicity, our first requirements on the choice of the points x_n are:

- (1) $P_1(x_n) = 1/n$, $n = 1, 2, \dots$ (in view of (3.1) this implies compactness of X_1).
- (2) $P_2(x_1) = P_2(x_{k_1}) = P_2(x_{k_1+1}) = P_2(x_{k_2}) = P_2(x_{k_2+1}) = \dots = e^1$ (so, the points $x_1, x_{k_1}, x_{k_1+1}, x_{k_2}, \dots$ are already determined and, by (3.2), $T(x_{k_n}) = x_{k_n+1}$, $n = 1, 2, \dots$).

Since the T -trajectory of the point $x_1 = \{1\} \times \{e^1\}$ will, due to (1), (3.1) and (3.2), approach the set \mathcal{C}_0 on which T is the identity, the ‘jumps’ performed by our trajectory have to tend to zero (in order not to destroy the continuity of T at the points of \mathcal{C}_0). Since the sequence $P_1(x_i)$ tends to zero, we only need that also $\varrho(P_2(x_i), P_2(x_{i+1})) \rightarrow 0$ for $i \rightarrow \infty$. To ensure this, it is sufficient to fix positive reals $\varepsilon_n \searrow 0$ and to choose $(x_i)_{i=1}^\infty$ such that if consecutive points x_i and x_{i+1} belong to the n -th block of the trajectory, then $\varrho(P_2(x_i), P_2(x_{i+1})) < \varepsilon_n$ (if they belong to different blocks, then $i = k_n$ for some n and so, by (2), we even have $\varrho(P_2(x_i), P_2(x_{i+1})) = 0$). In other words, our requirement is (we put $k_0 = 0$):

- (3a) for every $n = 1, 2, \dots$, the sequence $(P_2(x_i))_{i=k_{n-1}+1}^{k_n}$ is an ε_n -chain of points lying in the countable dense set $E = \{e^1, e^2, \dots\} \subseteq \mathcal{C}$ and, not to violate (2), it starts and ends with e^1 . (This together with (1) imply that T defined by (3.2) is continuous and $h(T) = h(T|_{\Omega(T)}) = h(T|_{\mathcal{C}_0}) = h(\text{Id}_{\mathcal{C}_0}) = 0$.)

We still need something more from the sequence $(x_i)_{i=1}^\infty$ because we want also $h^*(T) = \infty$. Therefore we add the following requirement on the choice of $(x_i)_{i=1}^\infty$:

- (3b) for some positive integers $t_{1,1}, t_{2,1} < t_{2,2}, \dots, t_{n,1} < t_{n,2} < \dots < t_{n,n}, \dots$, we have the following:
- $\{0, t_{1,1}\}$ is an independence set of times for the map T restricted to the first block $\{x_1, \dots, x_{k_1}\}$ and for the family of 2 sets $(1/\mathbb{N}) \times \{e^j\}$, $j = 1, 2$ (in the sense of Remark 2.3),
 - $\{0, t_{2,1}, t_{2,2}\}$ is an independence set of times for the map T restricted to the second block $\{x_{k_1+1}, \dots, x_{k_2}\}$ and for the family of 3 sets $(1/\mathbb{N}^{\uparrow(k_1+1)}) \times \{e^j\}$, $j = 1, 2, 3$,
 - \dots
 - $\{0, t_{n,1}, t_{n,2}, \dots, t_{n,n}\}$ is an independence set of times for the map T restricted to the n -th block $\{x_{k_{n-1}+1}, \dots, x_{k_n}\}$ and for the family of $n+1$ sets $(1/\mathbb{N}^{\uparrow(k_{n-1}+1)}) \times \{e^j\}$, $j = 1, 2, \dots, n+1$.
 - \dots

Realize that (3b) really implies $h^*(T) = \infty$. Indeed, for every j , every neighborhood (in the topology of X_1) of the point $e_0^j \in E_0 \subseteq \mathcal{C}_0$ contains the sets $(1/\mathbb{N}^{\uparrow(k_{n-1}+1)}) \times \{e^j\}$ for all sufficiently large n . Hence we easily come to the conclusion that *each finite subset* of the countable infinite set E_0 forms an IN-tuple for T (for any choice of neighbourhoods of these points, the tuple of the neighbourhoods has arbitrarily long finite independence sets of times; see Remark 2.2). In view of (2.1), it follows that $h^*(T) = \infty$. Note that our argument shows that even for every positive integer r , the set $S_r := \mathcal{C}_0 \sqcup \{x_r, x_{r+1}, \dots\}$ (notice that this is a T -invariant subset of X_1) has the property

$$h^*(T|_{S_r}) = \infty. \quad (3.4)$$

Thus, it remains to prove that the choice of $(x_i)_{i=1}^\infty$ can be done in such a way that all the requirements (1), (2), (3a) and (3b) are fulfilled simultaneously. To prove that, notice that due to cofiniteness emphasized in Lemma 2.9, one can find a positive integer $t_{1,1}$, as large as we need/wish, such that in \mathcal{C}

- there are four ε_1 -chains of the same length $t_{1,1} + 1$ – namely chains from e^1 to e^2 (the chain starts at e^1 at time 0 and ends at e^2 at time $t_{1,1}$), from e^2 to e^1 , from e^1 to e^1 and from e^2 to e^2 .

By concatenating these four chains and possibly some intermediate ε_1 -chains in an appropriate order, we obtain an ε_1 -chain $e^{i(1)}, \dots, e^{i(k_1)}$ in $E \subseteq \mathcal{C}$ with some length k_1 (this will be the length of the first block in (3.3)) and $i(1) = i(k_1) = 1$. Then we choose corresponding points x_1, \dots, x_{k_1} with $P_2(x_n) = e^{i(n)}$ and, to fulfill (1), $P_1(x_n) = 1/n$, $n = 1, \dots, k_1$ (the points x_1, x_{k_1} have in fact already been defined in this way, see (2)). We define T at the first k_1 points by putting $T(x_i) = x_{i+1}$ for $i = 1, \dots, k_1$. By the construction, $\{0, t_{1,1}\}$ is an independence set of times for the map T restricted to the first block $\{x_1, \dots, x_{k_1}\}$, even for T restricted to $\{x_1, \dots, x_{k_1-1}\}$, and for the family of 2 sets $(1/\mathbb{N}) \times \{e^j\}$, $j = 1, 2$. The first block of the trajectory of T may look like in Figure 3.1 (where, however, proper scales are ignored).

To define the second block of the trajectory, we proceed similarly. Again, using cofiniteness in Lemma 2.9, we find integers $0 < t_{2,1} < t_{2,2}$, perhaps very large ones, such that in \mathcal{C} there are 27 ε_2 -chains such that

- for any of the 27 choices of not necessarily distinct integers j_1, j_2, j_3 in the set $\{1, 2, 3\}$, one of these ε_2 -chains is such that it starts at e^{j_1} at time 0, then hits e^{j_2} at time $t_{2,1}$ and ends at e^{j_3} at time $t_{2,2}$.

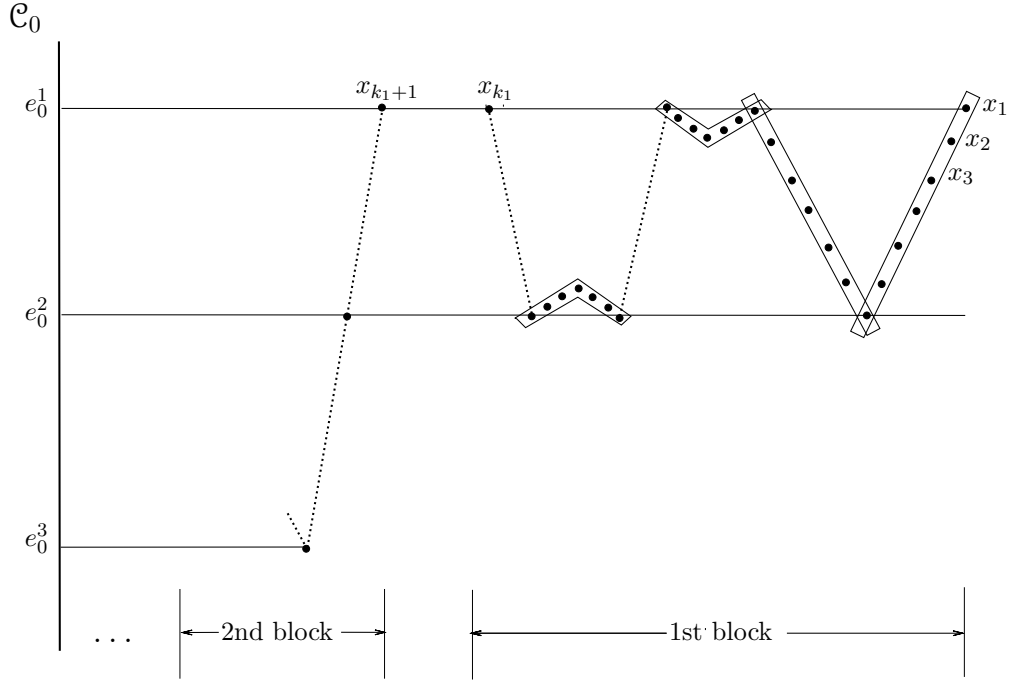


FIGURE 3.1. The first block (the parts corresponding to the four ε_1 -chains of the same length are framed; we do not care whether they cover the whole block $\{x_1, \dots, x_{k_1}\}$ or not).

By concatenating these 27 chains and possibly some intermediate ε_2 -chains in an appropriate order, we obtain an ε_2 -chain $e^{i(k_1+1)}, \dots, e^{i(k_2)}$ in $E \subseteq \mathcal{C}$ with some length $k_2 - k_1$ (this will be the length of the second block in (3.3)) and $i(k_1 + 1) = i(k_2) = 1$. Then we choose points x_n , $n = k_1 + 1, \dots, k_2$ with $P_2(x_n) = e^{i(n)}$ and $P_1(x_n) = 1/n$. Again, we put $T(x_i) = x_{i+1}$ for $i = k_1 + 1, \dots, k_2$.

Continuing this way, by induction we construct the whole set \mathcal{C} and the map $T|_{\mathcal{C}}$. Then, since (1), (2), (3a) and (3b) are fulfilled, we know that X_1 is compact, T is continuous, $h(T) = 0$ and $h^*(T) = \infty$ as shown above. The set E_0 is a sequence entropy set and so the same is true for its closure \mathcal{C}_0 . The set \mathcal{C}_0 is in fact the unique maximal sequence entropy set of the system.

Remark 3.1. The space X_1 is quite simple and we know that $S(X_1) \supseteq \{0, \infty\}$. Unfortunately, this space admits too many continuous selfmaps and it is probable that $S(X_1)$ is larger than $\{0, \infty\}$. Moreover, we prefer to have a continuum, while X_1 is a disconnected space.

Before going to a construction of a continuum X with $S(X) = \{0, \infty\}$, it will be instructive to show how we can modify the construction from Subsection 3.1 if we wish the phase space to be a continuum.

3.2. Modifying X_1 to get a continuum. In the construction of the space X_1 from the previous subsection, let \mathcal{C} be just a straight line segment in the plane. Then the system (X_1, T) lives in the plane. If we denote by I_i the straight line segment with the endpoints x_i and x_{i+1} , then the union of X_1 and all the segments I_i , $i \in \mathbb{N}$ is a continuum X_1^{\boxtimes} .² The continuous map T sends the endpoints of each I_i to the endpoints of I_{i+1} and so it can be extended to a continuous map which sends I_i onto I_{i+1} , $i = 1, 2, \dots$. What we get is obviously a map $T^{\boxtimes} : X_1^{\boxtimes} \rightarrow X_1^{\boxtimes}$ with $h(T^{\boxtimes}) = 0$ and $h^*(T^{\boxtimes}) = \infty$.

²In the next section we use this trick to get a continuum X with $S(X) = \{0, \infty\}$ but, instead of arcs, we will use much more complicated continua. Then the space X will be complicated, but the dynamics of all possible continuous selfmaps of X will be relatively simple and so we will be able to prove that $S(X) = \{0, \infty\}$.

Moreover, the ε_n -chains in the construction can be chosen and the full orbit $\{x_1, x_2, \dots\}$ of the point x_1 (here $T(x_i) = x_{i+1}$ for every i) can be placed in the plane in such a way that the phase space of the system (X_1^\square, T^\square) is the topologist's sine curve.

Remark 3.2. Still slightly modifying the above construction, one can get a map (even a homeomorphism) $T^\square: X_1^\square \rightarrow X_1^\square$ with $h(T^\square) = 0$ and $h^*(T^\square) = \infty$, where X_1^\square is the Warsaw circle. Notice that the Warsaw circle is a uniquely arcwise connected continuum, though not locally connected, and still it admits a map with infinite supremum sequence entropy but with zero entropy. It is also worth noticing that in all the above examples $h^*(\mathcal{T}) = \infty$ while $h^*(\mathcal{T}|_{\Omega(\mathcal{T})}) = 0$, where \mathcal{T} stands for T or T^\square .

4. A CONTINUUM X WITH $S(X) = \{0, \infty\}$

In this section, we will construct a continuum $X \subseteq \mathbb{R}^3$ with $S(X) = \{0, \infty\}$.³ In the next subsection we outline the construction and then we provide necessary details in the rest part of the section.

4.1. Bricks and outline of the construction of X . Now we outline the construction.

- To construct X , we use Cook continua $\mathcal{K}_0, \mathcal{K}_1, \mathcal{K}_2, \dots \subseteq \mathbb{R}^2$ from Lemma 2.14 as building bricks (they are subcontinua of, say, the Cook continuum constructed in the plane by Maćkowiak). To avoid cumbersome notations below, we will however denote them as

$$\mathcal{K}, \mathcal{K}_1, \mathcal{K}_2, \dots \tag{4.1}$$

(i.e. we omit the index in the notation of zeroth continuum). More precisely, our *bricks* will be homeomorphic copies of these continua, placed in \mathbb{R}^3 . We will use only one copy of \mathcal{K} , namely in the form $\mathcal{K}_0 = \{0\} \times \mathcal{K}$ (zeroth brick), and a sequence of sequences of other bricks in \mathbb{R}^3 :

$$\begin{aligned} (\mathcal{K}_i^1)_{i=1}^\infty &= \text{copy of } \mathcal{K}_1, \text{ copy of } \mathcal{K}_2, \text{ copy of } \mathcal{K}_3, \text{ copy of } \mathcal{K}_4, \dots \\ (\mathcal{K}_i^2)_{i=1}^\infty &= \text{copy of } \mathcal{K}_2, \text{ copy of } \mathcal{K}_4, \text{ copy of } \mathcal{K}_6, \text{ copy of } \mathcal{K}_8, \dots \\ (\mathcal{K}_i^3)_{i=1}^\infty &= \text{copy of } \mathcal{K}_4, \text{ copy of } \mathcal{K}_8, \text{ copy of } \mathcal{K}_{12}, \text{ copy of } \mathcal{K}_{16}, \dots \\ &\dots \end{aligned} \tag{4.2}$$

where copies of the same \mathcal{K}_n (belonging to different sequences) will be different, even disjoint and possibly with different diameters. In fact all the bricks will be pairwise disjoint, except of that two consecutive bricks in one sequence will have one point in common.

- We start the construction with the system (X_1, T) from Subsection 3.1, where the arbitrary continuum \mathcal{C} is now chosen to be the planar Cook continuum \mathcal{K} from our list (4.1). Thus,

$$X_1 = \mathcal{K}_0 \sqcup C \quad \text{with} \quad C = \{x_1, x_2, \dots\} \subseteq (1/\mathbb{N}) \times E, \tag{4.3}$$

E being a countable dense subset of \mathcal{K} . The space X_1 lives in \mathbb{R}^3 , we think of the Cook continuum $\mathcal{K}_0 = \{0\} \times \mathcal{K}$ as of a continuum lying in the vertical yz -plane (the x -axis going to the right).

- Then, by using the method from Subsection 3.2, with the arcs I_m (joining consecutive points x_m and x_{m+1} of the orbit C) replaced by appropriate continua D_m , we finally obtain our continuum $X \supseteq X_1$ in \mathbb{R}^3 . The continua D_1, D_2, D_3, \dots will have the form of ‘infinite chains’ from (4.2). More precisely, for every $m = 1, 2, \dots$ the continuum D_m will be the closure of the union of all sets in the m -th sequence in (4.2) and D_m and D_{m+1} will have just one point in common, namely x_{m+1} .
- We will need to study continuous selfmaps of X . First recall that $T: X_1 \rightarrow X_1$ is an injective map defined by

$$T|_{\mathcal{K}_0} = \text{Id}_{\mathcal{K}_0} \quad \text{and} \quad T(x_n) = x_{n+1}. \tag{4.4}$$

By Subsection 3.1, for the system (X_1, T) we have $h(T) = 0$ and $h^*(T) = \infty$. In Lemma 4.25 we then extend $T: X_1 \rightarrow X_1$ to a continuous map $G: X \rightarrow X$. Clearly, $h^*(G) = \infty$. We also carefully study the dynamics of all non-constant continuous maps $F: X \rightarrow X$. We show that they are of two kinds. Some of them coincide with an iterate of G on a substantial part of X , see Lemma 4.29, and then $h^*(F) = \infty$. The others have quite a simple dynamics, see Corollary 4.24 and Lemmas 4.26 and 4.27, and then $h^*(F) = 0$. Hence $S(X) = \{0, \infty\}$, see Proposition 4.30.

³We do not know whether X could be found in the plane.

4.2. Notation for bricks and details of the construction of X . As described above, we start with the space $X_1 \subseteq \mathbb{R}^3$ from (4.3), with the Cook continuum $\mathcal{K}_0 = \{0\} \times \mathcal{K}$ lying in the vertical yz -plane $\pi_0 = \{0\} \times \mathbb{R}^2$. Thus the zero-th brick from the list (4.1) has already been used. From now on we will use only bricks which are homeomorphic copies of the Cook continua in the set

$$D = \{\mathcal{K}_1, \mathcal{K}_2, \dots\}. \quad (4.5)$$

Consider any two consecutive points $x_m, x_{m+1} \in C$. They are in two vertical planes, $x_m \in \pi_m = \{1/m\} \times \mathbb{R}^2$ and $x_{m+1} \in \pi_{m+1} = \{1/(m+1)\} \times \mathbb{R}^2$. In the straight line segment with the endpoints x_m and x_{m+1} , choose a strictly monotone sequence of points starting with x_m and converging to x_{m+1} . For any two consecutive points in this sequence one can choose a ‘two cones base to base’ solid, i.e. the solid obtained by a rotation of a kite along its axis of symmetry (we shortly call it a ‘solid’), such that the two mentioned consecutive points are the two vertices of the solid. Thus, the points x_m and x_{m+1} are ‘joined’ by a sequence of solids

$$S_1^m \ni x_m, S_2^m, S_3^m, \dots \quad (4.6)$$

monotonically converging to x_{m+1} , see Figure 4.1.

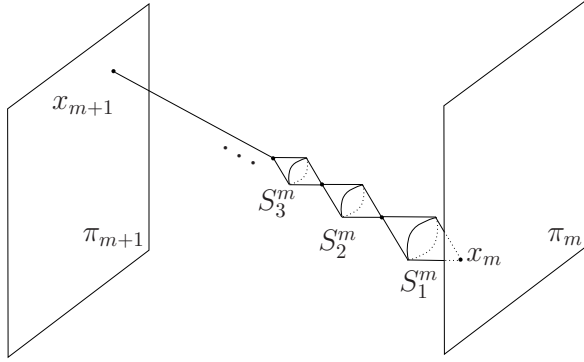


FIGURE 4.1. The sequence of solids ‘joining’ x_m and x_{m+1} .

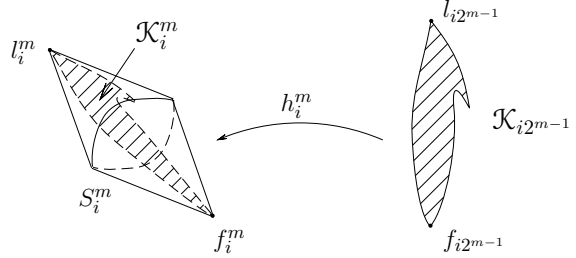


FIGURE 4.2. A Cook continuum \mathcal{K}_i^m inside the solid S_i^m .

By choosing sufficiently small cone angles we may assume that:

- each solid has the diameter equal to the distance of its vertices (hence the diameters of the solids in the sequence (4.6) tend to zero),
- two consecutive solids intersect only at their common vertex,
- given a vertex of a solid, no other point of the solid has the same P_1 -projection onto the x -axis,
- the union of the solids in (4.6) lies strictly between the vertical planes π_m and π_{m+1} , with the exception of the point x_m (one of the vertices of the first solid S_1^m) which lies in π_m .

Now we are going to specify the choice of copies of \mathcal{K}_i in (4.2), i.e. the choice of all bricks different from \mathcal{K}_0 . First, for each \mathcal{K}_i , $i = 1, 2, \dots$ fix, once and for all, two *extremal points* $f_i, \ell_i \in \mathcal{K}_i$, i.e. points whose (Euclidean) distance equals the diameter of \mathcal{K}_i . We will call them the *first point* and the *last point* of \mathcal{K}_i , respectively. For $m = 1, 2, \dots$ and $i = 1, 2, \dots$,

$$\text{let } \mathcal{K}_i^m \text{ be a homeomorphic copy of } \mathcal{K}_{i2^{m-1}} \quad (4.7)$$

(this corresponds to (4.2)) and consider a homeomorphism

$$h_i^m : \mathcal{K}_{i2^{m-1}} \rightarrow \mathcal{K}_i^m \quad (4.8)$$

(by Lemma 2.12(3), such a homeomorphism exists exactly one). Clearly, we can choose \mathcal{K}_i^m with the following properties:

- $\mathcal{K}_i^m \subseteq S_i^m$,

- the h_i^m -images of extremal points of $\mathcal{K}_{i2^{m-1}}$, i.e. the points $f_i^m := h_i^m(f_{i2^{m-1}})$ and $\ell_i^m := h_i^m(\ell_{i2^{m-1}})$, coincide with the two vertices of the solid S_i^m , see Figure 4.2.

So, when going from x_m towards x_{m+1} , we meet the points $x_m = f_1^m, \ell_1^m = f_2^m, \ell_2^m = f_3^m, \dots$. The points f_i^m and ℓ_i^m will be called *the first and the last point (the extremal points) of \mathcal{K}_i^m* .⁴ The other points of \mathcal{K}_i^m are its non-extremal points.

The sequence $(\mathcal{K}_i^m)_{i=1}^\infty$ ‘joins’, in a sense, x_m with x_{m+1} . We adopt the notations

$$D_m = \bigcup_{i=1}^\infty \mathcal{K}_i^m \cup \{x_{m+1}\} \quad \text{and} \quad D_m^* = \bigcup_{i=1}^\infty \mathcal{K}_i^m = D_m \setminus \{x_{m+1}\}. \quad (4.9)$$

The first three sets D_m can be seen in Figure 4.3; the bricks belonging to the same D_m are pairwise non-homeomorphic (because we have (4.2) and the continua \mathcal{K}_i in (4.1) are not homeomorphic).

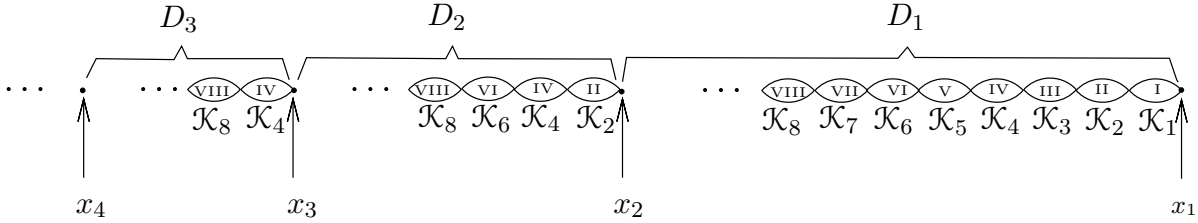


FIGURE 4.3. The first three sets D_m . Instead of “copy of \mathcal{K}_i ” we write just “ \mathcal{K}_i ”.

By the construction, we have the following obvious lemma (the convergence in (4) is the convergence in Hausdorff metric derived from the Euclidean metric in \mathbb{R}^3 ; we identify $\{x_{m+1}\}$ with x_{m+1}).

Lemma 4.1. *For each $m = 1, 2, \dots$, we have:*

- (1) x_m is the first point of \mathcal{K}_1^m , i.e. $x_m = f_1^m$;
- (2) $x_{m+1} \notin \bigcup_{i=1}^\infty \mathcal{K}_i^m = D_m^*$;
- (3) $\mathcal{K}_i^m \cap \mathcal{K}_{i+1}^m = \{\ell_i^m\} = \{f_{i+1}^m\}$;
- (4) $\mathcal{K}_n^m \rightarrow x_{m+1}$ when $n \rightarrow \infty$.
- (5) $D_m = \overline{\bigcup_{i=1}^\infty \mathcal{K}_i^m} = \overline{D_m^*}$.
- (6) The diameters of D_m tend to zero when $m \rightarrow \infty$.

Finally, we define

$$X = \mathcal{K}_0 \sqcup \bigcup_{m=1}^\infty D_m = \mathcal{K}_0 \sqcup \bigsqcup_{m=1}^\infty D_m^*. \quad (4.10)$$

Thus X is the union of bricks (planar Cook continua) \mathcal{K}_0 and \mathcal{K}_i^m , $m = 1, 2, \dots, i = 1, 2, \dots$.

Lemma 4.2. *The space $X \subseteq \mathbb{R}^3$ defined by (4.10) is a one-dimensional continuum.*

Proof. Since X_1 is compact and the diameters of D_m tend to zero, see Lemma 4.1(6), all those cluster points of the snake which are in π_0 belong to the head \mathcal{K}_0 . Hence X is compact. By Lemma 2.13, all the bricks \mathcal{K}_0 and \mathcal{K}_i^m are one-dimensional and since the union of countably many closed one-dimensional sets is one-dimensional, also X is one-dimensional, see e.g. [29, Theorem III.2]. \square

The continuum X is depicted in Figure 4.4. It lies in \mathbb{R}^3 and we are going to prove that $S(X) = \{0, \infty\}$; this will be done in Proposition 4.30 below. However, the proof requires some preparation.

Standing notation for the rest of Section 4: In the rest of the section, X denotes the space X constructed above in (4.10) and F denotes a continuous map $X \rightarrow X$.

⁴By the way, the terminology is in accordance with the fact that, due to the choice of S_i^m , these points are really extremal points of \mathcal{K}_i^m in the sense of distance.

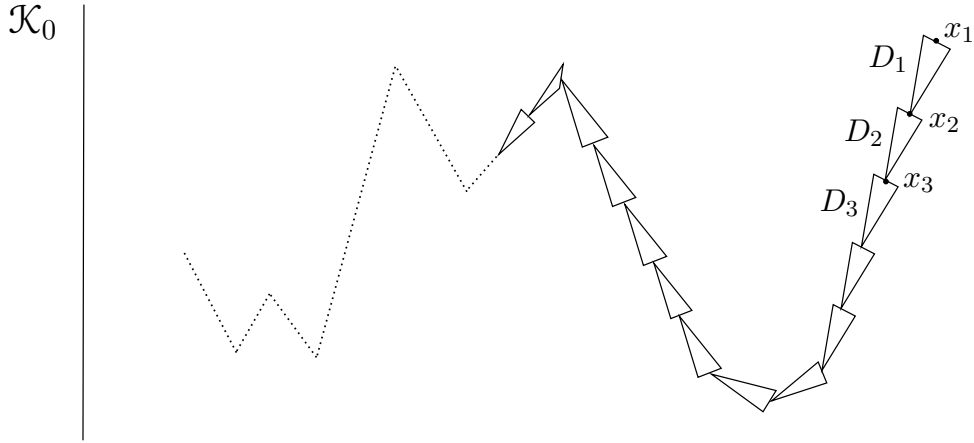


FIGURE 4.4. The continuum X with $S(X) = \{0, \infty\}$; see also Figures 3.1 and 4.3.

4.3. More terminology for parts of the space X . Properties of X . Call the brick \mathcal{K}_0 the *head* and the union of all other bricks in X the *snake*. In view of (4.10), X is the disjoint union of the head and the snake. Let

$$\Sigma = \{f_i^m, \ell_i^m : m, i = 1, 2, \dots\} = \{f_i^m : m, i = 1, 2, \dots\}$$

be the set of extremal points of the bricks belonging to the snake. We will say that $a \in X$ is *to the left of* $b \in X$ and we will write $a \prec b$ if for their first projections we have $P_1(a) < P_1(b)$. In such a case we will also say that b is *to the right of* a and write $b \succ a$. If $a \prec c \prec b$, we say that c is *between* a and b (or between b and a). Further, $a \preceq b$ or $b \succeq a$ means that $a = b$ or $a \prec b$ (note that $a \preceq b$ is not equivalent with $P_1(a) \leq P_1(b)$). Clearly, \preceq is a partial order on X . In the obvious meaning, the head \mathcal{K}_0 is *on the left end* of X and x_1 is *the rightmost point* of X . Note that the last point ℓ_i^m of \mathcal{K}_i^m is its leftmost point, similarly its first point f_i^m is its rightmost point. So $\ell_i^m \prec f_i^m$ and not conversely.⁵

If A, B are any subsets of X , we write $A \prec B$ (or $B \succ A$) if $a \prec b$ whenever $a \in A$ and $b \in B$. In such a case we say that A is *to the left of* B and B is *to the right of* A . If also $C \subseteq X$ and $A \prec C \prec B$, we say that C is *between* A and B (or between B and A). We are not going to define $A \preceq B$ if A, B are *arbitrary* subsets of X . However, for *special* subsets of X we will do that in an appropriate, maybe not the most natural, way in Subsection 4.5.

If we restrict the partial order \preceq to the set Σ , we get a linearly ordered set. The linearly ordered set (Σ, \succ) , i.e. the one with reversed order, is clearly well ordered. Therefore we immediately get the following fact.

Lemma 4.3. *Every nonempty subset of (Σ, \preceq) has the largest element.*

If $a, b \in \Sigma$, we denote by $\langle\langle a, b \rangle\rangle = \langle\langle b, a \rangle\rangle$ the union of the set $\{a, b\}$ with the set of all points in X which are between a and b ; in particular, $\langle\langle a, a \rangle\rangle = \{a\}$, $\mathcal{K}_i^m = \langle\langle f_i^m, \ell_i^m \rangle\rangle$ and $D_m = \langle\langle x_m, x_{m+1} \rangle\rangle$. We will also use the notation $\langle\langle \mathcal{K}_0, b \rangle\rangle$ for the union of the set $\mathcal{K}_0 \cup \{b\}$ with the set of all points which are to the right of all points of \mathcal{K}_0 and to the left of b . Clearly, $\langle\langle \mathcal{K}_0, x_m \rangle\rangle = \mathcal{K}_0 \sqcup \bigcup_{i=1}^m D_i$. Further, we put $((\mathcal{K}_0, b)) = \langle\langle \mathcal{K}_0, b \rangle\rangle \setminus \mathcal{K}_0$. The sets of the form $((\mathcal{K}_0, f_i^m))$ are said to be *sub-snakes*.

Let $a \preceq b$ be in Σ . Let $r : X \rightarrow \langle\langle a, b \rangle\rangle$ be the map sending all the points which are to the left of a to the point a and all the points which are to the right of b to the point b , leaving all the points from $\langle\langle a, b \rangle\rangle$

⁵The terminology “first” and “last” is related to the fact that we go along the snake towards the head, i.e. in the opposite direction as is the direction of the x -axis, while the terminology “left” and “right” corresponds to the direction of the x -axis.

fixed. Then r is obviously continuous, so it is a retraction of X onto $\langle\langle a, b \rangle\rangle$. We will call it a *monotone retraction*.⁶

Recall that if M is a connected set then $p \in M$ is called a *cut point* of M if $M \setminus \{p\}$ is not connected.

Lemma 4.4. *The space X constructed above in (4.10) has the following properties:*

- (1) *The sets D_m^* , the snake and the sub-snakes are connected. The sets D_m , $\langle\langle a, b \rangle\rangle$ and $\langle\langle \mathcal{K}_0, b \rangle\rangle$, where $a, b \in \Sigma$, $a \prec b$, are continua. The space X is the closure of the snake. The head \mathcal{K}_0 is in the closure of any sub-snake.*
- (2) *X is a one-dimensional continuum in \mathbb{R}^3 .*
- (3) *Every point from $\Sigma \setminus \{x_1\}$ is a cut point of X .*
- (4) *Σ is totally disconnected, i.e. it does not contain any non-degenerate continuum.*
- (5) *Every brick \mathcal{K}_i^m as well as every set D_m are monotone retracts of X .*
- (6) *If a non-degenerate continuum $Q \subseteq X$ intersects a brick \mathcal{K}_i^m in a point different from the extreme points of \mathcal{K}_i^m , then $Q \cap \mathcal{K}_i^m$ is a non-degenerate continuum.*

Proof. (1-2) X is one-dimensional by the discussion after (4.10). We prove the rest. For every m , the bounded set $D_m^* = \bigcup_{i=1}^{\infty} \mathcal{K}_i^m$ is connected because consecutive continua K_i^m, K_{i+1}^m intersect. Therefore the closure of this set, i.e. the set D_m , is a continuum. An analogous argument gives that every set $\langle\langle a, b \rangle\rangle$ is a continuum. Similarly, the snake $\bigcup_{m=1}^{\infty} D_m$ is bounded and connected and so its closure is a continuum. For the same reason all the sub-snakes are connected. Thus, to finish the proof of (1-2), it is sufficient to show that X coincides with the closure of the snake (since the points of the snake which are outside of a given sub-snake have distance from the head larger than some positive constant, it is obvious that then \mathcal{K}_0 is in the closure of the sub-snake).

Each finite union $\bigcup_{m=1}^N D_m$ is compact, so it is sufficient to show that the intersection of the closure of the snake with the vertical plane π_0 containing \mathcal{K}_0 is exactly the set \mathcal{K}_0 . By construction from Subsection 3.1 this intersection contains the set E_0 dense in \mathcal{K}_0 and so it contains \mathcal{K}_0 . To prove the converse inclusion, let $(y_n)_{n=1}^{\infty}$ be a sequence in the snake converging to a point $\omega \in \pi_0$. We need to prove that $\omega \in \mathcal{K}_0$.

Consider also the sequence $(x_n)_{n=1}^{\infty}$ of points forming the set C in (4.3). Recall that the distance from x_n to π_0 is $1/n$ and if a subsequence of x_n converges to some point, then this point belongs to the closure of E_0 , i.e. is in \mathcal{K}_0 . Let δ_n be the diameter of D_n . Each y_n belongs to (at least one) $D_{k(n)}$. This means that the (Euclidean) distance in R^3 between y_n and $x_{k(n)}$ is at most $\delta_{k(n)}$. Since y_n converges to ω and, by Lemma 4.1, $\delta_{k(n)}$ converges to zero, then $x_{k(n)}$ converges to ω . Hence $\omega \in \mathcal{K}_0$.

(3) If $c \in \Sigma \setminus \{x_1\}$ then $X \setminus \{c\}$ is the disjoint union of the set U of all points of X which are to the left of c and the set V of all points of X which are to the right of c . Both U and V are nonempty and open in X and so $X \setminus \{c\}$ is not connected.

(4) It is obvious that Σ is totally disconnected.

(5) Even more has already been explained when defining the monotone retraction.

(6) To simplify the notation, instead of \mathcal{K}_i^m, f_i^m and ℓ_i^m write for a moment \mathcal{K}, f and ℓ . We have $X = L \sqcup \mathcal{K} \sqcup R$ where L or R are the sets of all those points from X which are to the left of ℓ or to the right of f , respectively.

By the assumption, some point $b \in Q$ belongs to $\mathcal{K} \setminus \{\ell, f\}$. If $Q \subseteq \mathcal{K}$ then $Q \cap \mathcal{K} = Q$ and we are done. So assume that Q intersects $L \cup R$. Without loss of generality suppose that there is a point $a \in Q \cap L$. Then, since Q contains both a and b and, by the proof of (3), ℓ separates a and b in X , the continuum Q contains ℓ . Thus the compact set $Q \cap (\mathcal{K} \sqcup R)$ contains ℓ and b . We claim that it is a continuum. Otherwise $Q \cap (\mathcal{K} \sqcup R) = A \sqcup B$ where A, B are nonempty compact sets. One of them, say A , contains ℓ . Then $Q = ((Q \cap L) \cup A) \sqcup B$ is a disjoint union of two nonempty compact sets, which contradicts the fact that it is a continuum.

We have proved that $Q \cap (\mathcal{K} \sqcup R) = Q \setminus L$ is a non-degenerate continuum. If it is disjoint with R then we are done because $Q \cap \mathcal{K} = (Q \setminus L) \setminus R = Q \setminus L$. Otherwise, the non-degenerate continuum $Q \setminus L$ (containing

⁶In fact there are no other retractions of X onto $\langle\langle a, b \rangle\rangle$, but this fact is not important for us and so we will not prove it.

b and ℓ) contains a point $c \in R$ and by repeating an argument from above we get that $(Q \setminus L) \setminus R = Q \cap \mathcal{K}$ is a nondegenerate continuum. \square

4.4. Properties of continuous selfmaps of X . The list of all bricks is: $\mathcal{K}_0, \mathcal{K}_1^1, \mathcal{K}_2^1, \dots, \mathcal{K}_1^2, \mathcal{K}_2^2, \dots, \dots$. It follows from the construction that two terms of this list are homeomorphic sets if and only if they are copies of the same of the continua $\mathcal{K}_1, \mathcal{K}_2, \dots$, i.e. if and only if they are of the form \mathcal{K}_i^m and \mathcal{K}_j^n with $i2^{m-1} = j2^{n-1}$.

Lemma 4.5. *Consider bricks in X and in particular the brick \mathcal{K}_0 and the bricks $\mathcal{K}_i^m = h_i^m(\mathcal{K}_{i2^{m-1}})$ and $\mathcal{K}_j^n = h_j^n(\mathcal{K}_{j2^{n-1}})$.*

- (a) *The only continuous selfmaps of a brick are constant maps and the identity.*
- (b) *The only continuous maps $\mathcal{K}_i^m \rightarrow \mathcal{K}_0$ are constant maps.*
- (c) *The only continuous maps $\mathcal{K}_0 \rightarrow \mathcal{K}_i^m$ are constant maps.*
- (d) *If the sets $\mathcal{K}_{i2^{m-1}}$ and $\mathcal{K}_{j2^{n-1}}$ are different terms of the sequence $\mathcal{K}_1, \mathcal{K}_2, \dots$ (i.e., $i2^{m-1} \neq j2^{n-1}$), then the only continuous maps $\mathcal{K}_i^m \rightarrow \mathcal{K}_j^n$ are constant maps.*
- (e) *If the sets $\mathcal{K}_{i2^{m-1}}$ and $\mathcal{K}_{j2^{n-1}}$ are equal (i.e., $i2^{m-1} = j2^{n-1}$) then there exists a non-constant continuous map $\varphi : \mathcal{K}_i^m \rightarrow \mathcal{K}_j^n$. Such a map exists only one, it is a homeomorphism, $\varphi(f_i^m) = f_j^n$ and $\varphi(\ell_i^m) = \ell_j^n$.*

Proof. (a) follows from Corollary 2.15(\tilde{a}). (b), (c) and (d) follow from Corollary 2.15(\tilde{b}).

(e) Put $\mathcal{K}^* := \mathcal{K}_{i2^{m-1}} = \mathcal{K}_{j2^{n-1}}$. The homeomorphism $H = h_j^n \circ (h_i^m)^{-1} : \mathcal{K}_i^m \rightarrow \mathcal{K}_j^n$ obviously has all the required properties. Now let $\varphi : \mathcal{K}_i^m \rightarrow \mathcal{K}_j^n$ be any non-constant continuous map. Then $(h_j^n)^{-1} \circ \varphi \circ h_i^m$ is a non-constant continuous map $\mathcal{K}^* \rightarrow \mathcal{K}^*$. Since \mathcal{K}^* is a Cook continuum, the only non-constant continuous selfmap of \mathcal{K}^* is the identity. Thus $(h_j^n)^{-1} \circ \varphi \circ h_i^m = \text{Id}_{|\mathcal{K}^*}$ whence $\varphi = h_j^n \circ (h_i^m)^{-1} = H$ and so the proof of uniqueness is finished. \square

Lemma 4.6. *If B is a brick then $F(B)$ is either a singleton or a brick homeomorphic to B .*

Proof. The snake can be written in the form $\bigcup_{i=1}^{\infty} B_i$ where B_i are bricks. Fix a brick B . It is either the head \mathcal{K}_0 or one of the bricks B_i . Denote $F|_B$ by G . Assume that $G(B)$ is not a singleton. Then it is a non-degenerate continuum and so, by Lemma 4.4(4), it cannot be a subset of Σ . To prove that it is a brick, distinguish three cases.

Case 1 : $G(B)$ is a non-degenerate subset of the head \mathcal{K}_0 . By Lemma 4.5(b), B cannot be any of those B_i . Therefore $B = \mathcal{K}_0$. By Lemma 4.5(a), G is the identity and so $G(B) = \mathcal{K}_0$.

Case 2 : $G(B)$ is a non-degenerate subset of the snake. Let B_k be one of those bricks in the snake, which are intersected by $G(B)$ in a non-extremal point (i.e. in a point different from the first and last point of B_k). By Lemma 4.4(6) the continuum $G(B)$ intersects B_k in a non-degenerate subcontinuum. Now let r_k be the monotone retraction of X onto B_k . The map $r_k \circ G : B \rightarrow B_k$ is continuous and not constant. By Lemma 4.5, B_k is a copy of B and $r_k \circ G(B) = B_k$. Hence, taking into account the special form of the retraction r_k , $G(B)$ contains all the points of B_k with possible exceptions of the extremal points of B_k . However, $G(B)$ is a compact set, therefore $G(B) \supseteq B_k$.

Let us summarize. We have proved that if k is such that $G(B)$ intersects B_k in a non-extremal point, then B_k is a copy of B (hence B is not the head \mathcal{K}_0 , because in the snake we do not have any brick homeomorphic to \mathcal{K}_0) and $G(B) \supseteq B_k$. We claim that such a brick B_k is only one. Suppose, on the contrary, that $G(B)$ intersects two bricks in the snake in non-extremal points. Since the projection of the continuum $G(B)$ onto the x -axis is again a continuum, $G(B)$ intersects also two *consecutive* bricks in the snake in non-extremal points. We know that each of these two consecutive bricks is a copy of B . However, no two consecutive bricks in the snake are homeomorphic, a contradiction.

Thus $G(B)$ intersects only one brick B_k in the snake in a non-extremal point. Then $G(B) \supseteq B_k$ and $G(B)$ does not intersect any other brick in a non-extremal point. It follows that $G(B) = B_k$ and the proof in this case is finished, because the fact that B_k is a copy of B has already been established.

Case 3 : $G(B)$ intersects both the head and the snake. So, the continuum $G(B)$ intersects both \mathcal{K}_0 and some brick in the snake. Then each brick in the snake which is to the left of this one, is intersected by $G(B)$,

even in non-extremal points. This is in particular true for some two consecutive bricks and in the same way as in Case 2 we get that these two consecutive bricks in the snake are homeomorphic. This contradiction shows that Case 3 is impossible. \square

Corollary 4.7. *Let \mathcal{B} be a subfamily of the family of all bricks and let $F(\bigcup \mathcal{B}) \supseteq C$ for some brick C . Then there is a brick $B \in \mathcal{B}$ such that B is homeomorphic to C and $F(B) = C$.*

Proof. There are only countably many bricks in \mathcal{B} and C has cardinality \mathfrak{c} . Therefore there is a brick $B \in \mathcal{B}$ such that $F(B)$ intersects C in more than one point. Hence, by Lemma 4.6, $F(B)$ is a brick homeomorphic to B and since different bricks have at most one point in common, $F(B) = C$. \square

If \mathcal{K} is a brick in the snake with extremal points f and ℓ , put $\mathcal{K}^\circ := \mathcal{K} \setminus \{f, \ell\}$.⁷

Corollary 4.8. *Let B and C be bricks in the snake such that $F(B) = C$. Then $F|_B : B \rightarrow C$ is a homeomorphism sending the first and the last point of B to the first and the last point of C , respectively. So, $F(B^\circ) = C^\circ$.*

Proof. By Lemma 4.6, C is homeomorphic to B . The rest follows from Lemma 4.5(a)(e). \square

The following immediately follows from Lemma 4.6 and Corollary 4.8.

Corollary 4.9. *Let $\ell \prec f$ be consecutive points of Σ mapped by F to consecutive points $F(\ell) \prec F(f)$ of Σ . Then the brick $\langle\langle \ell, f \rangle\rangle$ is mapped onto the brick $\langle\langle F(\ell), F(f) \rangle\rangle$.*

Lemma 4.10. (a) *If a point b of a brick B is fixed for F then either b is the only fixed point in B and then $F(B) = \{b\}$, or all points of B are fixed.*

(b) *If two points of a brick are fixed then all points of the brick are fixed.*

(c) *If B is a brick and two points of B are mapped by F to the same point, then $F(B)$ is a singleton.*

(d) *If B_1 and B_2 are bricks in the snake (different or not, homeomorphic or not) and one of the extremal points of B_1 is mapped by F to a non-extremal point $z \in B_2$ then $F(B_1) = \{z\}$.*

(e) *If B_1 and B_2 are bricks in the same set D_m and one of the points of B_1 is mapped by F to a point $z \in B_2 \setminus B_1$ then $F(B_1) = \{z\}$.*

(f) *If B is a brick in the snake and $F(B)$ intersects the head \mathcal{K}_0 then $F(B)$ is a singleton in \mathcal{K}_0 .*

Proof. (a) By Lemma 4.6, $F(B) = \{b\}$ or $F(B)$ is a brick homeomorphic to B and clearly containing b . However, by construction of X , the bricks which are different from B but intersect B are not homeomorphic to B . Thus $F(B) = \{b\}$ or $F(B) = B$. In the latter case, all the points of B are fixed by Lemma 4.5(a).

(b) This follows from (a).

(c) If not, then by Lemma 4.6 and Corollary 4.8 the map $F|_B : B \rightarrow F(B)$ is a homeomorphism, contradicting our assumption that it is not injective.

(d) Just combine Lemma 4.5 and Lemma 4.6.

(e) Since $F(B_1) \ni z$, by Lemma 4.6 either $F(B_1) = \{z\}$ or $F(B_1)$ is a brick homeomorphic to B_1 . Suppose that we are in the latter case. Since $z \notin B_1$, the brick $F(B_1) \neq B_1$. Thus B_1 and $F(B_1)$ are two different but homeomorphic bricks. Hence, since the bricks in D_m are pairwise non-homeomorphic, the brick $F(B_1)$ does not belong to D_m . However, the structure of X is such that a brick which does not belong to D_m never contains a point z belonging to a brick in D_m . Thus, we have the former case $F(B_1) = \{z\}$.

(f) Since no brick homeomorphic with B intersects \mathcal{K}_0 , by Lemma 4.6 we get that $F(B)$ is a singleton in \mathcal{K}_0 . \square

The following lemma easily follows from the construction of X and so we omit the proof.

Lemma 4.11. *Let \mathcal{P} be a family of some of the bricks in the snake. Assume that \mathcal{P} has the following five properties.*

(P1) *\mathcal{P} contains at least one brick in the snake.*

(P2) *If $\mathcal{K}_i^m \in \mathcal{P}$ then also $\mathcal{K}_{i+1}^m \in \mathcal{P}$.*

⁷If the brick \mathcal{K} is neither \mathcal{K}_0 nor \mathcal{K}_1^1 , then \mathcal{K}° is the interior of \mathcal{K} in the space X .

- (P3) If $\mathcal{K}_i^m \in \mathcal{P}$ then also $\mathcal{K}_{i-1}^m \in \mathcal{P}$, provided $i \geq 2$.
(P4) If $\mathcal{K}_i^m \in \mathcal{P}$ for all $i = 1, 2, \dots$, then also $\mathcal{K}_1^{m+1} \in \mathcal{P}$.
(P5) If $\mathcal{K}_i^m \in \mathcal{P}$ for all $i = 1, 2, \dots$, then also $\mathcal{K}_k^{m-1} \in \mathcal{P}$ for some $k \geq 1$, provided $m \geq 2$.

Then all bricks in the snake belong to \mathcal{P} .

- Lemma 4.12.** (a) If the snake is not F -invariant then F is constant.
(b) If the set Σ is not F -invariant then F is constant.
(c) If $F(\mathcal{K}_0) = \{z_0\}$ for some $z_0 \in \mathcal{K}_0$, then $F(X) = \{z_0\}$ and so F is constant.

Proof. (a) By the assumption, there is a brick B in the snake such that $F(B)$ contains a point $z_0 \in \mathcal{K}_0$. By Lemma 4.10(f) we get $F(B) = \{z_0\} \subseteq \mathcal{K}_0$. So the family \mathcal{P} of all bricks in the snake whose F -image is $\{z_0\}$ is nonempty. We are going to show that \mathcal{P} satisfies also (P2)-(P5) from Lemma 4.11.

Indeed, (P2) and (P3) follow from Lemma 4.10(f). Further, if $F(\mathcal{K}_i^m) = \{z_0\}$ for all $i = 1, 2, \dots$, then continuity gives $F(x_{m+1}) = z_0$ and by Lemma 4.10(f) we get $F(\mathcal{K}_1^{m+1}) = \{z_0\}$. So we have (P4). To prove (P5), let $m \geq 2$ and $F(\mathcal{K}_i^m) = \{z_0\}$ for all $i = 1, 2, \dots$. In particular, $F(x_m) = z_0$. We have $z_0 = \{0\} \times \{z\}$ where z belongs to \mathcal{K} in (4.1) and $\mathcal{K}_0 = \{0\} \times \mathcal{K}$. Let $\varepsilon > 0$ and let V be an open neighbourhood of z in \mathcal{K} , different from the whole \mathcal{K} . Then $W = X \cap ([0, \varepsilon] \times V)$ is an open neighbourhood of z_0 in X . The open set $F^{-1}(W)$ contains the point x_m and so there exists N such that $F^{-1}(W)$ contains also \mathcal{K}_k^{m-1} for all $k \geq N$. Put $D = \{x_m\} \cup \bigcup_{k=N}^{\infty} \mathcal{K}_k^{m-1}$. Then D is a continuum and so $F(D) \subseteq W$ is also a continuum and contains the point $z_0 \in \mathcal{K}_0$. Since V is not the whole \mathcal{K} , the set W consists of $\{0\} \times V$ and ‘pieces’ of the snake, where each ‘piece’ is a subset of the snake with positive distance from \mathcal{K}_0 (hence from z_0) and with positive distance from the union of all other ‘pieces’. Therefore the continuum $F(D)$ is necessarily a subset of $\{0\} \times V$. So, $F(D) \subseteq \mathcal{K}_0$. Then by Lemma 4.5(b), each brick in D is mapped to a point and since the consecutive bricks in D intersect, they are mapped to the same point. Thus $F(D)$ is a singleton and so $F(D) = \{z_0\}$. Hence (P5).

By Lemma 4.11, all the bricks in the snake are mapped to z_0 and since X is the closure of the snake, $F(X) = \{z_0\}$.

(b) If a point from Σ is mapped to the head, just use (a). Otherwise there is an extremal point of some brick \mathcal{K}_s^r which is mapped to a non-extremal point z of some brick \mathcal{K}_j^n . By Lemma 4.10(d), $F(\mathcal{K}_s^r) = \{z\}$. So the family \mathcal{P} of all bricks in the snake whose F -image is $\{z\}$ is nonempty. We claim that \mathcal{P} satisfies also (P2)-(P5) from Lemma 4.11. Since z is a non-extremal point of \mathcal{K}_j^n , (P2) and (P3) follow from Corollary 4.10(d). Further, if $F(\mathcal{K}_i^m) = \{z\}$ for all $i = 1, 2, \dots$, then continuity gives $F(x_{m+1}) = z$ and by Corollary 4.10(d) we get $F(\mathcal{K}_1^{m+1}) = \{z\}$. So we have (P4). To prove (P5), let $m \geq 2$ and $F(\mathcal{K}_i^m) = \{z\}$ for all $i = 1, 2, \dots$. In particular, we have $F(x_m) = z$. Let $U(z) \subseteq (\mathcal{K}_j^n)^\circ$ be a small neighbourhood of z . By continuity, there is $N \in \mathbb{N}$ such that $F(\mathcal{K}_j^{m-1}) \subseteq U(z)$ for all $j \geq N$. Then, say by Corollary 4.10(d), for all $j \geq N$ there are points $z_j \in U(z)$ such that $F(\mathcal{K}_j^{m-1}) = \{z_j\}$, $j \geq N$. Then the F -image of the continuum $\{x_m\} \cup \bigcup_{j=N}^{\infty} \mathcal{K}_j^{m-1}$ is the countable set $\{z\} \cup \{z_j : j \geq N\}$. Since this image has to be a continuum, the only possibility is that $z_j = z$ for all $j \geq N$. Hence $\mathcal{K}_j^{m-1} \in \mathcal{P}$ for all $j \geq N$ and (P5) is proved. Now, by Lemma 4.11, all the bricks in the snake are mapped to z . Since X is the closure of the snake, we get $F(X) = \{z\}$.

(c) Consider a neighbourhood W of z_0 as in the proof of (a). Now the open set $F^{-1}(W)$ contains the set \mathcal{K}_0 . Since \mathcal{K}_0 is a compact set in $X \subseteq [0, 1] \times \mathcal{K}$, $F^{-1}(W)$ necessarily contains a whole sub-snake $S = ((\mathcal{K}_0, f_i^m))$ for some m and i . Since S is connected and has zero distance from z_0 , its image $F(S) \subseteq W$ is connected and has zero distance from $F(z_0) = z_0$. Therefore, due to the structure of W described in the proof of (a), $F(S)$ is necessarily a subset of $\{0\} \times V$. So, $F(S) \subseteq \mathcal{K}_0$. Then by Lemma 4.5(b), each brick in S is mapped to a point and since the consecutive bricks intersect, also each set $D_m \subseteq S$ is mapped to a point. Since also consecutive sets D_m intersect, it is easy to see that $F(S)$ is a singleton. Since $F(S)$ has zero distance from z_0 , we get $F(S) = \{z_0\}$. Thus the snake is not F -invariant and (a) implies that F is a constant map. Since z_0 is in its range, we get $F(X) = \{z_0\}$. \square

Lemma 4.13. Assume that F is not constant. Then we have the following.

- (a) $F(\Sigma) \subseteq \Sigma$ and $F|_{\Sigma} : \Sigma \rightarrow \Sigma$ is order-preserving, i.e. $a \preceq b$ implies $F(a) \preceq F(b)$ whenever $a, b \in \Sigma$.

- (b) F sends connected subsets of Σ to connected subsets of Σ .⁸ In particular, two consecutive points of Σ are mapped to one point of Σ or again to two consecutive points of Σ .
- (c) Let $a, b \in \Sigma$, $a \preceq b$. Then $F(a), F(b) \in \Sigma$, $F(a) \preceq F(b)$ and F maps $\langle\langle a, b \rangle\rangle$ onto $\langle\langle F(a), F(b) \rangle\rangle$.
- (d) For every $m \in \mathbb{N}$ there is $k(m) \in \mathbb{N}$ such that $F(D_m^*) \subseteq D_{k(m)}^*$ (hence $F(D_m) \subseteq D_{k(m)}$).
- (e) If $F(D_m^*)$ contains the first point of $D_{k(m)}^*$ and has zero distance from the first point of $D_{k(m)+1}^*$, then $F(D_m^*) = D_{k(m)}^*$.

Proof. (a-b) By Lemma 4.12(b), Σ is F -invariant. Assume that $\ell \preceq f$ are two consecutive points of Σ , i.e. the extremal points of a brick B in the snake. We are going to prove that $F(\ell) = F(f)$ or $F(\ell)$ and $F(f)$ are two consecutive points of Σ , i.e. the last point and the first point, respectively, of a brick in the snake (in particular, in either case we have $F(\ell) \preceq F(f)$). If $F(B)$ is a singleton, this is trivial. Otherwise, by Lemma 4.6, $F(B)$ is a brick C homeomorphic to B . So, also C is in the snake. By Corollary 4.8, ℓ and f are mapped to the last point and to the first point of C , respectively, and we are again done.

Recall that $\Sigma = \bigsqcup_{m=1}^{\infty} \Sigma_m$ where $\Sigma_m := \Sigma \cap D_m^*$. Fix m . Using the fact that on any two consecutive points of Σ the map F is order preserving in the special way proved above (i.e. the two consecutive points are mapped either to the same point or to two consecutive points), we easily by induction get that F is order preserving on Σ_m and F sends connected subsets of Σ_m to connected subsets of $\Sigma_{k(m)}$ where $k(m)$ is a positive integer depending on m .

The elements of Σ_m form a sequence converging to the largest point f_1^{m+1} of Σ_{m+1} . If $F(\Sigma_m)$ has the smallest element then, by continuity of F at f_1^{m+1} we get that F sends f_1^{m+1} to that smallest element. If the set $F(\Sigma_m)$ does not have the smallest element then its elements form a sequence converging to $f_1^{k(m)+1}$ and continuity of F at f_1^{m+1} gives $F(f_1^{m+1}) = f_1^{k(m)+1}$. In either case, the facts that F is order preserving both on Σ_m and Σ_{m+1} and sends connected subsets of these two sets again to connected sets, imply that F is order preserving on the set $\Sigma_m \cup \Sigma_{m+1}$ and sends connected subsets of this set to connected subsets of Σ . Now it follows by induction that F sends connected subsets of Σ to connected subsets of Σ .

(c) We know from (a) and (b) that $F(a) \preceq F(b)$ are in Σ and F maps $\Sigma \cap \langle\langle a, b \rangle\rangle$ onto $\Sigma \cap \langle\langle F(a), F(b) \rangle\rangle$ in the order-preserving way. Now it is sufficient to use Lemma 4.10(c) and Corollary 4.9.

(d) Fix m . The set $\Sigma \cap D_m^*$ consists of a sequence of points $f_1^m, f_2^m, f_3^m, \dots$. Since Σ is F -invariant, for some $k(m)$ we have $F(f_1^m) \in \Sigma \cap D_{k(m)}^*$ and, by induction and using (b), we get that the whole set $\Sigma \cap D_m^*$ is mapped into $\Sigma \cap D_{k(m)}^*$. Now use Lemma 4.10(c) and Corollary 4.9, or the result from (c).

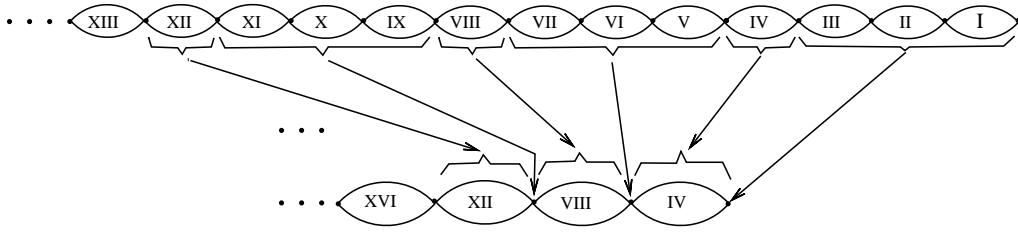
(e) This follows from the previous parts. □

Lemma 4.14. *Let $m < M$ be positive integers. Then there is exactly one continuous surjective map of D_m onto D_M .*

Proof. Let $M = m + k$, $k > 0$. Let B_1, B_2, B_3, \dots be the list of all bricks in D_m^* (here $B_i := \mathcal{K}_i^m$). Then $B'_{2^k}, B'_{2 \cdot 2^k}, B'_{3 \cdot 2^k}, \dots$ is the list of all bricks in D_M^* . Any two of the bricks in the former list are non-homeomorphic and for every i , there is a homeomorphism $h_i : B_{i \cdot 2^k} \rightarrow B'_{i \cdot 2^k}$ sending the first point and the last point of $B_{i \cdot 2^k}$ to the first point and the last point of $B'_{i \cdot 2^k}$, respectively.

Suppose that $\Phi : D_m \rightarrow D_M$ is a continuous surjective map. It is the restriction of a continuous selfmap of X (consider the monotone retraction of X onto D_m composed with Φ). So, we can apply Lemma 4.6 to get that, for every j , $\Phi(B_j)$ is either a singleton or the brick $B'_{i \cdot 2^k}$, where the latter case is possible only if $j = i \cdot 2^k$. The remaining last point of D_m is mapped to a point. Since countably many singletons cannot cover the whole brick $B'_{i \cdot 2^k}$, the surjective map Φ necessarily sends $B_{i \cdot 2^k}$ onto $B'_{i \cdot 2^k}$, $i = 1, 2, \dots$. By Lemma 4.5(e), Φ coincides on $B_{i \cdot 2^k}$ with the homeomorphism h_i , $i = 1, 2, \dots$. If j is not a multiple of 2^k , $\Phi(B_j)$ is necessarily a singleton. By continuity (remembers also how h_i maps extremal points of the bricks), there is no choice: Φ necessarily sends the bricks B_1, \dots, B_{2^k-1} to the first point of B'_{2^k} , then the bricks $B_{2^k+1}, \dots, B_{2 \cdot 2^k-1}$ to the point where B'_{2^k} and $B'_{2 \cdot 2^k}$ intersect, etc., see Figure 4.5. Also, by continuity, Φ has to send the last point of D_m to the last point of D_M , see Lemma 4.1(4).

⁸Here we use “connected” in the sense of the theory of ordered sets, not topology.

FIGURE 4.5. The unique continuous surjective map $D_1 \rightarrow D_3$.

So, there is at most one continuous surjective Φ . Since the map acting as just described is obviously continuous and surjective, the proof is finished. \square

Remark 4.15. If $m < M$ then there are (countably) many non-constant continuous non-surjective maps of D_m into D_M (say, modify Figure 4.5 by sending $\bigcup_{i=1}^7 \mathcal{K}_i^1$ to the intersection of \mathcal{K}_4^3 and \mathcal{K}_8^3 , or by sending the closure of $\bigcup_{i=13}^{\infty} \mathcal{K}_i^1$ to the intersection of \mathcal{K}_{12}^3 and \mathcal{K}_{16}^3 , or both). What about non-constant continuous maps $D_M \rightarrow D_m$? There is no such surjective map (no brick in D_M can be continuously mapped onto such a brick in D_m , say onto the first one, which is non-homeomorphic with any of the bricks in D_M). Non-constant non-surjective maps $D_M \rightarrow D_m$ do exist; one can show that each of them is the composition of a monotone retraction of D_M onto a brick B in D_M with the unique homeomorphism from B onto the brick in D_m homeomorphic to B .

4.5. Induced function \widehat{F} . The sets $\text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$ and $\text{Fix}(F)$. To prove that $S(X) = \{0, \infty\}$, we need to understand the dynamics of all continuous maps $F : X \rightarrow X$. To this end, it will be convenient first to replace every such map F by what we will call an induced function \widehat{F} . It will be something like a discrete analogue of F , when we are basically interested only in the images of bricks. To avoid a technical problem with the fact that two bricks may intersect, we partition the continuum X into the sets (recall that if \mathcal{K} is a brick in the snake with extremal points f and ℓ , then $\mathcal{K}^\circ := \mathcal{K} \setminus \{f, \ell\}$)

$$\begin{aligned}
& \mathcal{K}_0 \prec \dots \\
& \prec \dots \prec (\mathcal{K}_i^m)^\circ \prec \{f_i^m\} \prec \dots \prec (\mathcal{K}_2^m)^\circ \prec \{f_2^m\} \prec (\mathcal{K}_1^m)^\circ \prec \{f_1^m\} \\
& \prec \dots \\
& \prec \dots \prec (\mathcal{K}_i^2)^\circ \prec \{f_i^2\} \prec \dots \prec (\mathcal{K}_2^2)^\circ \prec \{f_2^2\} \prec (\mathcal{K}_1^2)^\circ \prec \{f_1^2\} \\
& \prec \dots \prec (\mathcal{K}_i^1)^\circ \prec \{f_i^1\} \prec \dots \prec (\mathcal{K}_2^1)^\circ \prec \{f_2^1\} \prec (\mathcal{K}_1^1)^\circ \prec \{f_1^1\}
\end{aligned} \tag{4.11}$$

where $A \prec B$ (or $B \succ A$) has the meaning from the beginning of Subsection 4.3, i.e. $a \prec b$ whenever $a \in A$ and $b \in B$. Denote the family of all sets in (4.11) by \widehat{X} . If $A, B \in \widehat{X}$ then we introduce also the notation $A \preceq B$ (or $B \succeq A$). By definition, for such *special* subsets of X , this means that $A = B$ or $A \prec B$. Recall that for *arbitrary* subsets of X we do not define $A \preceq B$.⁹

Clearly, (\widehat{X}, \preceq) is a linearly ordered set and analogously as in Lemma 4.3 we have the following obvious fact.

Lemma 4.16. *Every nonempty subset of (\widehat{X}, \preceq) has the largest element.*

In particular, every element of \widehat{X} different from \mathcal{K}_0 has its *left neighbour* (the largest among those elements which are to the left of it). Similarly, one can define the *right neighbour* of an element of \widehat{X} ; however, \mathcal{K}_0 and the elements $\{f_1^m\}$ do not have right neighbours.

Lemma 4.17. *Let A be any of the sets appearing in (4.11), i.e., let $A \in \widehat{X}$. Then $F(A) \subseteq B$ for exactly one $B \in \widehat{X}$. So, the continuous map $F : X \rightarrow X$ naturally induces a function $\widehat{F} : \widehat{X} \rightarrow \widehat{X}$ defined by $\widehat{F}(A) = B$ when $F(A) \subseteq B$ for $A, B \in \widehat{X}$.*

⁹Note that if $A, B \in \widehat{X}$ then just defined relation $A \preceq B$ is not equivalent with $a \preceq b$, $a \in A$, $b \in B$. Try $A = B = (\mathcal{K}_i^m)^\circ$.

Proof. We only need to prove the existence of such a set B (since A is nonempty and \widehat{X} is a partition of X , such B is then unique). This is trivial if A is a singleton $\{f_n^m\}$. If $A = \mathcal{K}_0$ then, by Lemma 4.6, $F(A)$ is either \mathcal{K}_0 or a singleton, and again such B exists. Finally, let $A = (K_i^m)^\circ$ for some m and i . Then, by Lemma 4.6 and Corollary 4.8, $F(A)$ is a singleton or $F(A) = (K_j^n)^\circ$ for some n and j , and again we are done. \square

In view of Lemma 4.6, $\widehat{F}(A) = B$ thus means that $F(A)$ is a singleton in B or coincides with B (or both, if $B \in \widehat{X}$ is a singleton). Note also that if $A, B \in \widehat{X}$ and $F(A)$ intersects B then the previous lemma and the fact that \widehat{X} is a partition of X , imply that $F(A) \subseteq B$ and so $\widehat{F}(A) = B$.

If ψ is any function let $\text{Fix}(\psi)$ denote the *set of fixed points of ψ* . We are going to study the set $\text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$. It will help us to describe the set $\text{Fix}(F)$ which will play a crucial role in description of all possible dynamics on X .

Lemma 4.18. *Assume that $(\mathcal{K}_s^r)^\circ$ is a fixed point of \widehat{F} . Then we have one of the following.*

- (a) $F((\mathcal{K}_s^r)^\circ) = (\mathcal{K}_s^r)^\circ$ and the restriction of F to \mathcal{K}_s^r is identity.
- (b) $F((\mathcal{K}_s^r)^\circ) = \{z\}$ for some $z \in (\mathcal{K}_s^r)^\circ$ and $F(X) = \{z\}$.

In particular, F has a fixed point in $(\mathcal{K}_s^r)^\circ$.

Proof. By continuity, also the Cook continuum \mathcal{K}_s^r is F -invariant. So, either F is identity on \mathcal{K}_s^r and we are in the case (a), or $F(\mathcal{K}_s^r) = \{z\}$ for some $z \in \mathcal{K}_s^r$. In the latter case $z \in (\mathcal{K}_s^r)^\circ$, because $(\mathcal{K}_s^r)^\circ$ is F -invariant. It follows that Σ is not F -invariant whence $F(X) = \{z\}$ by Lemma 4.12(b). So we are in the case (b). \square

Corollary 4.19. *Assume that F is not constant and $(\mathcal{K}_s^r)^\circ \in \text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$. Then also $\{f_s^r\}$ and $\{\ell_s^r\} = \{f_{s+1}^r\}$ belong to $\text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$.*

Proof. Lemma 4.18 implies that the restriction of F to \mathcal{K}_s^r is identity. \square

Lemma 4.20. $\text{Fix}(F) \subseteq \bigcup \text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$ and $\text{Fix}(F)$ intersects every set $A \in \text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$.

Proof. Let $x \in \text{Fix}(F)$. Then $x \in A$ for some $A \in \widehat{X}$ and since x is fixed for F , we have $F(A) \cap A \neq \emptyset$. Hence $\widehat{F}(A) = A$ and so $x \in A \in \text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$.

Now let a set $A \in \widehat{X}$ be a fixed point of \widehat{F} . If $A = \{a\}$ then a is a fixed point of F . If A is not a singleton then either $A = \mathcal{K}_0$ or $A = (\mathcal{K}_j^n)^\circ$ for some n and j . In the former case we have $F(\mathcal{K}_0) \subseteq \mathcal{K}_0$ and the Cook continuum $\mathcal{K}_0 = A$ contains a fixed point of F . In the latter case use Lemma 4.18. \square

Lemma 4.21. *Suppose that $A \prec B$ in \widehat{X} are such that $\widehat{F}(A) \succ A$ and $\widehat{F}(B) \prec B$. Then there exists C between A and B such that $\widehat{F}(C) = C$.¹⁰*

Proof. Suppose, on the contrary, that there is no such C . We may assume that $A \neq \mathcal{K}_0$, since otherwise we can replace A by $A^* \in \widehat{X}$ which is between A and B and sufficiently ‘close’ to \mathcal{K}_0 (then continuity of F ensures that $\widehat{F}(A^*)$ is to the right of A^*). Further, we may assume that not only B , but also every element between A and B (if A and B are not neighbours in \widehat{X}) is mapped by \widehat{F} to the left. Otherwise we replace A by the largest element between A and B which is mapped by \widehat{F} to the right. So, it is sufficient to deduce a contradiction from the following assumptions: $\mathcal{K}_0 \prec A \prec B$, A is mapped to the right and all D with $A \prec D \prec B$ are mapped to the left.

First assume that A has its right neighbour. Then either $A = (\mathcal{K}_i^m)^\circ$ is mapped to the right and its right neighbour $\{f_i^m\}$ to the left, or $A = \{f_i^m\}$ (with $i \geq 2$) is mapped to the right and its right neighbour $(\mathcal{K}_{i-1}^m)^\circ$ to the left. Either case clearly contradicts the continuity of F .

Now let $A = \{f_1^m\}$ for some $m \geq 2$ (since $A \prec B$, $m \neq 1$). Since A is mapped to the right, the continuity of F implies that all elements between A and B which are sufficiently ‘close’ to A are also mapped to the right, a contradiction with the fact that all D with $A \prec D \prec B$ are mapped to the left. \square

¹⁰The lemma works also with $B \prec A$, but we will not need it.

Since the largest element of \widehat{X} is either a fixed point of \widehat{X} or is mapped to the left, this lemma immediately gives the following corollary.

Corollary 4.22. *If there is A in \widehat{X} which is mapped by \widehat{F} to the right, then \widehat{F} has a fixed point different from \mathcal{K}_0 .*

A subset of \widehat{X} is said to be *connected*, if it contains all elements C between A and B whenever it contains A and B .

Lemma 4.23. *The set $\text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$ is nonempty, has the smallest element and the largest element, and is connected. Moreover, if $\text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$ has more than one element, then $\text{Fix}(F) = \bigcup \text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$.*

Proof. Either \mathcal{K}_0 is a fixed point for \widehat{F} or $\mathcal{K}_0 \prec \widehat{F}(\mathcal{K}_0)$ and then $\text{Fix}(\widehat{F}) \neq \emptyset$ by Corollary 4.22. From now on we will assume that $\text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$ has more than one element (and hence F is not constant), otherwise the rest of the lemma is obvious.

$\text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$ has the largest element by Lemma 4.16. Suppose for a moment that $\text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$ has no smallest element. In view of Corollary 4.19 it means that either

- (i) for some m , $\text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$ does not contain $\{f_1^{m+1}\}$, while containing $\{f_i^m\}$ with arbitrarily large i , or
- (ii) $\text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$ does not contain \mathcal{K}_0 , while containing $\{f_i^m\}$ with arbitrarily large m (i depends on m).

In case (i), the point f_1^{m+1} , being the limit of a sequence of fixed points of F , is obviously fixed for F . So $\{f_1^{m+1}\}$ is fixed for \widehat{F} , a contradiction. In case (ii), by considering a subsequence of fixed points converging to a point in the head, we see that F has necessarily a fixed point also in \mathcal{K}_0 and so, by Lemma 4.6, $\mathcal{K}_0 \in \text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$, a contradiction.

To prove that $\text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$ is connected, let $A, B \in \text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$ and $A \prec C \prec B$. We need to prove that $C \in \text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$. By Corollary 4.19, it is sufficient to consider two cases, namely

- (I) $A = \{f_j^{m+r}\} \prec \{x_{m+r}\} \prec \dots \prec \{x_{m+1}\} \prec \{f_i^m\} = B$ where $r \geq 0$, and if $r = 0$ then this reduces to $A = \{f_j^m\} \prec \{f_i^m\} = B$ where $j > i$,
- (II) $A = \mathcal{K}_0 \prec \{f_i^m\} = B$.

First consider the case (I). To prove that $C \in \text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$, it is clearly sufficient to show that the map F is identity on $D_{AB} = \langle\langle f_j^{m+r}, f_i^m \rangle\rangle$. Let \mathcal{B}_{AB} be the family of all bricks which are subsets of D_{AB} (i.e. bricks ‘joining’ A and B). Then $F(D_{AB})$ is a sub-continuum of X containing both f_j^{m+r} and f_i^m . Therefore the first projection of $F(D_{AB})$ contains the whole interval whose endpoints are the first projections of f_j^{m+r} and f_i^m , i.e

$$P_1(F(D_{AB})) \supseteq P_1(D_{AB}) . \quad (4.12)$$

Now notice that, by Lemma 4.6, if $B_1, B_2 \in \mathcal{B}_{A,B}$ then $F(B_1)$ is either disjoint with B_2 (then even their first projections are disjoint) or $F(B_1)$ is a singleton in B_2 or $F(B_1) = B_2$, where $F(B_1) = B_2$ is possible only if B_1 is homeomorphic to B_2 . It follows that for every brick $B_2 \in \mathcal{B}_{AB}$ there is a brick $B_1 \in \mathcal{B}_{AB}$ homeomorphic to B_2 (perhaps $B_1 = B_2$) such that $F(B_1) = B_2$ (one may notice that this strengthens (4.12) to $F(D_{AB}) \supseteq D_{AB}$). Indeed, otherwise the first projection of the F -image of each of the countably many bricks in \mathcal{B}_{AB} covers at most one point of the uncountable first projection of B_2 , a contradiction with (4.12).

However, as one can see from the construction of X (see (4.2) and (4.9)), every second brick among those ‘joining’ B and x_{m+1} is such that no *other* brick in \mathcal{B}_{AB} is homeomorphic with it (if $r = 0$ or if $r = 1$ and $j = 1$ then necessarily even every brick, not only every second one, has this property). Therefore every such brick is mapped onto itself and so, by Lemma 4.5(a), F is identity on it.

So, not only F fixes the singletons A and B but F is identity also on every second brick joining B and x_{m+1} (joining B and f_j^m if $r = 0$). It follows that F is identity on $\langle\langle x_{m+1}, f_i^m \rangle\rangle$ (on $\langle\langle f_j^m, f_i^m \rangle\rangle$ if $r = 0$), see Lemma 4.10(b). If $r = 0$ or $r = 1$ and $j = 1$ (i.e. if the whole D_{AB} is a subset of D_m), we are already done. Otherwise, reasoning similarly but with B replaced by $B' = \{x_{m+1}\} = \{f_1^{m+1}\}$, we get that F is identity also on that part of D_{AB} which lies in D_{m+1} . Continuing this way, after finitely many steps we finish the proof that F is identity on the whole set $\langle\langle f_j^{m+r}, f_i^m \rangle\rangle$.

Now consider the case (II). It is sufficient to prove that F is identity on $D_{\mathcal{K}_0 B} = \langle\langle \mathcal{K}_0, f_i^m \rangle\rangle$. The set $F(D_{\mathcal{K}_0 B})$ is a sub-continuum of X containing both a point from \mathcal{K}_0 (because $\mathcal{K}_0 \in \text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$ and \mathcal{K}_0 has fixed point property) and the point f_i^m . By the same cardinality argument as in the case (I) we get that F is identity on the sub-snake $(\langle \mathcal{K}_0, f_i^m \rangle)$ and so it is identity also on $\langle\langle \mathcal{K}_0, f_i^m \rangle\rangle$.

Finally, let $\text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$ have at least two elements. In the proofs of the cases (I) and (II) we have shown that F is identity on every set which is an element of $\text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$. This together with Lemma 4.20 give $\text{Fix}(F) = \bigcup \text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$. \square

Corollary 4.24. *If F is not constant, then the set $\text{Fix}(F)$ is either \mathcal{K}_0 or of the form $\langle\langle \mathcal{K}_0, f_i^m \rangle\rangle$ or $\langle\langle f_j^n, f_i^m \rangle\rangle$ for some $f_j^n \preceq f_i^m$.¹¹*

Proof. By Lemma 4.23, $\text{Fix}(\widehat{F}) \neq \emptyset$. First assume that $\mathcal{K}_0 \in \text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$, i.e. $F(\mathcal{K}_0) \subseteq \mathcal{K}_0$. By Lemma 4.5(a), F is constant or identity on \mathcal{K}_0 . The former case implies, by Lemma 4.12(c), that F is constant on X , a contradiction. Thus F is identity on \mathcal{K}_0 and so $\text{Fix}(F) \supseteq \mathcal{K}_0$. Then, combining Corollary 4.19 and Lemma 4.23 we get that either $\text{Fix}(F) = \mathcal{K}_0$ or $\text{Fix}(F) = \langle\langle \mathcal{K}_0, f_i^m \rangle\rangle$ for some m and i .

If some $(\mathcal{K}_s^r)^\circ \in \text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$, then by Corollary 4.19 the set $\text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$ has more than one element and, by using Lemma 4.23, we get that $\text{Fix}(F)$ is either $\langle\langle \mathcal{K}_0, f_i^m \rangle\rangle$ or $\langle\langle f_j^n, f_i^m \rangle\rangle$ for some $f_j^n \prec f_i^m$.

Finally, let some $\{f_i^m\} \in \text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$, i.e. $f_i^m \in \text{Fix}(F)$. We may assume that $\text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$ contains neither \mathcal{K}_0 nor any of the sets $(\mathcal{K}_s^r)^\circ$, since these cases have already been considered. Thus, since $\text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$ is connected, $\{f_i^m\}$ is the only element of $\text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$. By Lemma 4.20, $\text{Fix}(F) = \{f_i^m\}$. \square

4.6. Proof that $S(X) = \{0, \infty\}$. We show that X does admit more continuous selfmaps than just the identity and the constant maps, but not too many of them. Moreover, we show that besides selfmaps with rather trivial dynamics, there is in a sense only one significant selfmap of X . So, X exhibits some degree of rigidity.

Lemma 4.25. *There is a continuous map $G: X \rightarrow X$, a continuous extension of the map $T: X_1 \rightarrow X_1$, with the following properties.*

- (a) $h^*(G) = \infty$.
- (b) For every $r \in \mathbb{N}$, the set $S_r^{\boxtimes} = \langle\langle \mathcal{K}_0, x_r \rangle\rangle$ is G -invariant and $h^*(G|_{S_r^{\boxtimes}}) = \infty$.
- (c) For every $m \in \mathbb{N}$, $G(D_m^*) = D_{m+1}^*$.

Proof. Recall that by the construction of X from Subsection 4.1 we have $X \supseteq X_1$ where X_1 is the space from Subsection 3.1, with $\mathcal{C}_0 := \mathcal{K}_0$ (the arbitrary continuum \mathcal{C}_0 has been replaced by the Cook continuum \mathcal{K}_0). For the map $T: X_1 \rightarrow X_1$ we have $h^*(T) = \infty$, even for every positive integer r we have $h^*(T|_{S_r}) = \infty$ for the T -invariant set S_r , see (3.4). Note that $S_r \subseteq S_1 = X_1$, $S_r^{\boxtimes} \subseteq S_1^{\boxtimes} = X$ and $S_r \subseteq S_r^{\boxtimes}$. To prove the existence of G with (a) and (b), it is therefore sufficient to extend $T: X_1 \rightarrow X_1$ to a continuous map $G: X \rightarrow X$ such that S_r^{\boxtimes} is G -invariant. Indeed, $G|_{X_1} = T$ and $h^*(T|_{S_r}) = \infty$ trivially imply $h^*(G|_{S_r^{\boxtimes}}) = \infty$.

To find such G , recall the homeomorphisms $h_i^m: \mathcal{K}_{i2^{m-1}} \rightarrow \mathcal{K}_i^m$ used in the construction of X , see (4.8). Define $G: X \rightarrow X$ as follows:

- (1) $G|_{X_1} = T$;
- (2) for every $m \in \mathbb{N}$, G maps D_m^* onto D_{m+1}^* (hence (c)) in such a way that for every $i \in \mathbb{N}$,

$$G(\mathcal{K}_{2i}^m) = \mathcal{K}_i^{m+1} \quad \text{with } G(x) = h_i^{m+1} \circ (h_{2i}^m)^{-1} \quad \text{whenever } x \in \mathcal{K}_{2i}^m,$$

$$\text{and } G(\mathcal{K}_{2i-1}^m) = \{f_i^{m+1}\}.$$

(One can see that the restriction of G to \mathcal{K}_{2i}^m defined above is a homeomorphism and it is in fact the only non-constant continuous map $\mathcal{K}_{2i}^m \rightarrow \mathcal{K}_i^{m+1}$, see Lemma 4.5(e), cf. Lemma 2.12(3).) Clearly, $G: X \rightarrow X$ is a continuous extension of T and every set S_r^{\boxtimes} is G -invariant. \square

Lemma 4.26. *Assume that F is not constant and $p \in \Sigma$ is the smallest element of $\text{Fix}(F)$. Then for every $x \in X$ such that $x \preceq p$ we have $F^2(x) = p$ (but in general not $F(x) = p$).*

¹¹The case $f_j^n = f_i^m = f_1^1$ can in fact be excluded because if $\text{Fix}(F) = \{f_1^1\}$ then F can be shown to be constant.

Proof. We have $p = f_j^n$ for some n and j . The brick \mathcal{K}_j^n contains no fixed point of F different from p . Therefore, by Lemma 4.10(a), $F(\mathcal{K}_j^n) = \{p\}$. Then, by Lemma 4.13(c), the sub-snake $((\mathcal{K}_0, p))$ is F -invariant. It is sufficient to prove that the F^2 -image of this sub-snake is just $\{p\}$; since the head is in the closure of this sub-snake, the lemma follows. There are three possibilities.

Case 1 : $F((\mathcal{K}_0, p)) = \{p\}$. Then there is nothing to prove.

Case 2 : $F((\mathcal{K}_0, p)) = \mathcal{K}_j^n$. Since $F(\mathcal{K}_j^n) = \{p\}$, we get $F^2((\mathcal{K}_0, p)) = \{p\}$ as required. To show that here we cannot in general replace F^2 by F , see Figure 4.3 and consider the following map. Let $p = f_2^2$ (i.e., p is the first point of the brick \mathcal{K}_2^2 , which is a copy of \mathcal{K}_4) and let $\text{Fix}(F) = \langle\langle p, x_1 \rangle\rangle$. Now, send the points of D_2 which are to the left of p into p , the brick \mathcal{K}_1^3 (which is also a copy of \mathcal{K}_4) homeomorphically onto \mathcal{K}_2^2 , and all those points of X which are to the left of \mathcal{K}_1^3 into the last point of \mathcal{K}_2^2 .

Case 3 : $F((\mathcal{K}_0, p)) \supseteq \mathcal{K}_{j+1}^n \cup \mathcal{K}_j^n$. We show that this is impossible. Indeed, by Corollary 4.7, in this case there are bricks B_1 and B_2 in $((\mathcal{K}_0, p))$ such that $F(B_1) = \mathcal{K}_j^n$ and $F(B_2) = \mathcal{K}_{j+1}^n$. Since $F(\mathcal{K}_j^n) = \{p\}$, also $F(\mathcal{K}_{j+1}^n) = \{p\}$ (note that \mathcal{K}_{j+1}^n cannot be mapped onto \mathcal{K}_j^n because the bricks \mathcal{K}_{j+1}^n and \mathcal{K}_j^n are not homeomorphic, see Lemma 4.6). So, B_1 and B_2 are in $((\mathcal{K}_0, f_{j+2}^n))$, B_1 is homeomorphic to \mathcal{K}_j^n and B_2 is homeomorphic to \mathcal{K}_{j+1}^n . However, it follows from (4.2), cf. Figure 4.3, that in $((\mathcal{K}_0, f_{j+2}^n))$ there may exist such a brick B_1 or such a brick B_2 , but not both. The reason is that no two bricks in D_n are homeomorphic and when we construct the bricks in the sets D_{n+1}, D_{n+2}, \dots , then they are always homeomorphic copies of every second of the bricks in the previous set. However, K_j^n and K_{j+1}^n are two consecutive bricks of D_n . \square

Lemma 4.27. *Assume that F is not constant and $q \in \Sigma$ is the largest element of $\text{Fix}(F)$. Then there exists $N \in \mathbb{N}$ such that $F^N(x) = q$ for all points $x \succ q$.*

Proof. We have $q = f_j^n$ for some n and j . Let $q \prec x_1$, otherwise there is nothing to prove.

First assume that $j \geq 2$, i.e. \mathcal{K}_j^n is not the first brick of D_n . Since q is fixed, we deduce from Lemma 4.13 that the F -images of the bricks $\mathcal{K}_{j-1}^n, \dots, \mathcal{K}_1^n$ are subsets of $\langle\langle q, x_n \rangle\rangle$. Since these bricks are pairwise non-homeomorphic, Lemma 4.6 shows that they are mapped to singletons. Due to continuity of F we then have

$$F(\langle\langle q, x_n \rangle\rangle) = \{q\}$$

and (if $n \geq 2$), using again Lemma 4.13 and continuity of F , $F(D_{n-1}^*) \subseteq \langle\langle q, x_n \rangle\rangle$. The last two formulas give $F^2(D_{n-1}^*) = \{q\}$. In particular the point x_{n-1} is mapped by F^2 to q and so (if $n \geq 3$), by Lemma 4.13 applied to the continuous map F^2 , we get $F^2(D_{n-2}^*) \subseteq \langle\langle q, x_n \rangle\rangle$. Hence $F^3(D_{n-2}^*) = \{q\}$. Continuing this way (if $n \geq 4$) we get $F^4(D_{n-3}^*) = \{q\}, \dots, F^n(D_1^*) = \{q\}$. So, we see that for $N = n$, $F^N(x) = q$ for all points $x \succ q$.

Now assume that $j = 1$, i.e. $q = f_1^n = x_n$. Since $q \prec x_1$, we have $n \geq 2$. By Lemma 4.13, either $F(D_{n-1}^*) = \{q\}$ or $F(D_{n-1}^*) \subseteq D_{n-1}^*$. The latter case is impossible because all the bricks in D_{n-1}^* are pairwise non-homeomorphic and so, by Lemma 4.6, each of them would be mapped to a singleton or onto itself. However, if a brick in D_{n-1}^* is mapped onto itself then the restriction of F to such a brick is the identity, contradicting the assumption that q is the maximal element of $\text{Fix}(F)$. Therefore we have

$$F(D_{n-1}^*) = \{q\}. \quad (4.13)$$

If $n \geq 3$, consider the next set D_{n-2}^* . Since $F(x_{n-1}) = q$ and F is continuous, by Lemma 4.13 we get that either $F(D_{n-2}^*) = \{q\}$ or $F(D_{n-2}^*) \subseteq D_{n-1}^*$. Using (4.13) we get that in either case $F^2(D_{n-2}^*) = \{q\}$. If $n \geq 4$, consider the set D_{n-3}^* . Since $F^2(x_{n-2}) = q$, by Lemma 4.13 applied to F^2 we get that either $F^2(D_{n-3}^*) = \{q\}$ or $F^2(D_{n-3}^*) \subseteq D_{n-1}^*$. Hence $F^3(D_{n-3}^*) = \{q\}$. Continuing this way (if $n \geq 5$) we get $F^4(D_{n-4}^*) = \{q\}, \dots, F^{n-1}(D_1^*) = \{q\}$. So, we see that for $N = n - 1$, $F^N(x) = q$ for all points $x \succ q$. \square

Lemma 4.28. *Assume that F is not constant and has no fixed point in the snake. Let $m \in \mathbb{N}$. Then $F(D_m^*) \subseteq D_{k(m)}^*$ for some $k(m) > m$.*

Proof. By Lemma 4.13(d), $F(D_m^*) \subseteq D_{k(m)}^*$ for some $k(m) \in \mathbb{N}$. No element $A \in \widehat{X} \setminus \{\mathcal{K}_0\}$ is a fixed point of \widehat{F} , otherwise Lemma 4.20 gives the existence of a fixed point of F in the snake, a contradiction. Therefore, by Corollary 4.22, every element $A \in \widehat{X} \setminus \{\mathcal{K}_0\}$ is mapped by \widehat{F} to the left. It follows that $k(m) \geq m$. To

prove strict inequality, suppose on the contrary that $F(D_m^*) \subseteq D_m^*$. Consider the point x_{m+1} . Since it is in the closure of D_m^* and $F(D_m^*) \subseteq D_m^*$, it is mapped by F to the closure of D_m^* . By the assumption, it is not a fixed point of F and so it is in fact mapped by F to D_m^* . This contradicts the fact that every element $A \in \widehat{X} \setminus \{\mathcal{K}_0\}$ is mapped by \widehat{F} to the left, in particular $\widehat{F}(\{x_{m+1}\}) \prec \{x_{m+1}\}$. \square

If $F(D_m^*) \subseteq D_{k(m)}^*$, then we say that the *jump* of D_m^* has length $k(m) - m$ and we write $\text{jump}(m) = k(m) - m$. Under the assumptions of the previous lemma, all the sets D_m^* have jumps of positive length (i.e., they ‘jump’ to the left under the action of F).

Lemma 4.29. *Assume that F is not constant and has no fixed point in the snake.*

- (a) *For every m , $\text{jump}(m+1) \in \{\text{jump}(m) - 1, \text{jump}(m)\}$.*
- (b) *The sequence $\text{jump}(1), \text{jump}(2), \dots$ is eventually constant.*
- (c) *There exist positive integers r and N such that on $S_r^{\boxtimes} = \langle\langle \mathcal{K}_0, x_r \rangle\rangle$ we have*

$$F|_{S_r^{\boxtimes}} = G^N|_{S_r^{\boxtimes}}$$

where G is the map from Lemma 4.25.

Proof. (a) Fix m . By Lemma 4.13, we have $F(D_m^*) \subseteq D_{k(m)}^*$ and $F(D_{m+1}^*) \subseteq D_{k(m+1)}^*$. Since $F|_{\Sigma}$ preserves the order \preceq on Σ , and D_{m+1}^* is to the left of D_m^* , either $D_{k(m+1)}^*$ is to the left of $D_{k(m)}^*$ or $D_{k(m+1)}^* = D_{k(m)}^*$. Thus, either $k(m+1) > k(m)$ or $k(m+1) = k(m)$. On the other hand, we cannot have $k(m+1) \geq k(m) + 2$ because then there would exist at least one set D_r^* lying between the sets $D_{k(m+1)}^*$ and $D_{k(m)}^*$ and so the F -image of the connected set $D_m^* \cup D_{m+1}^*$ would be disconnected. Therefore either $k(m+1) = k(m) + 1$ or $k(m+1) = k(m)$. In the former case $\text{jump}(m+1) = k(m+1) - (m+1) = k(m) - m = \text{jump}(m)$ and in the latter case $\text{jump}(m+1) = k(m+1) - (m+1) = k(m) - m - 1 = \text{jump}(m) - 1$.

(b) This follows from (a) since, under the assumptions, the jumps are positive integers.

(c) By (b), there exist positive integers $r \geq 2$ and N such that $\text{jump}(i) = N$ for $i \geq r - 1$. Thus $F(D_i^*) \subseteq D_{i+N}^*$ for every $i \geq r - 1$. Here $F(D_{r-1}^*)$ may be a proper subset of D_{r-1+N}^* (cf. Remark 4.15). However, we claim that $F(D_i^*) = D_{i+N}^*$ for $i \geq r$. Indeed, suppose that there exists $i \geq r$ with $F(D_i^*) \subsetneq D_{i+N}^*$. Then, by Lemma 4.13(e), the set $F(D_i^*)$ either does not contain the first point of D_{i+N}^* or has positive distance from the first point of D_{i+N+1}^* . It contradicts the fact that the F -images of connected sets $D_i^* \cup D_{i-1}^*$ and $D_i^* \cup D_{i+1}^*$ have to be connected.

Once we know that $F(D_i^*) = D_{i+N}^*$ for $i \geq r$, Lemma 4.13(e) implies that even $F(D_i) = D_{i+N}$, $i \geq r$. Since $G^N(D_i) = D_{i+N}$ for every i , Lemma 4.14 gives that F and G^N coincide on D_i , $i \geq r$. Hence they coincide on the sub-snake $\langle\langle \mathcal{K}_0, x_r \rangle\rangle$ and, by continuity, also on S_r^{\boxtimes} . \square

We finally get the following result.

Proposition 4.30. *For the one-dimensional continuum $X \subseteq \mathbb{R}^3$ constructed above in (4.10) we have $S(X) = \{0, \infty\}$. Moreover, if $F : X \rightarrow X$ is a continuous map then $h^*(F) = \infty$ if F is non-constant and has no fixed point in the snake, otherwise $h^*(F) = 0$.*

Proof. Let $F : X \rightarrow X$ be a continuous map. If F is constant then $h^*(F) = 0$. Now let F be non-constant.

First assume that F has a fixed point in the snake. By Corollary 4.24, $\text{Fix}(F)$ is either of the form $\langle\langle \mathcal{K}_0, f_i^m \rangle\rangle$ or $\langle\langle f_j^n, f_i^m \rangle\rangle$ for some $f_j^n \preceq f_i^m$. Then, by Lemmas 4.26 and 4.27, there exists a positive integer N such that $F^N(X) = \text{Fix}(F)$. This clearly implies that $h_A(F) = 0$ for any sequence A and so $h^*(F) = 0$ (alternatively, use Proposition 2.7(a)).

Now assume that F has no fixed point in the snake. Then, by Lemma 4.29(c), there exist positive integers r and N such that on $S_r^{\boxtimes} = \langle\langle \mathcal{K}_0, x_r \rangle\rangle$ we have

$$F|_{S_r^{\boxtimes}} = G^N|_{S_r^{\boxtimes}}$$

where G is the map from Lemma 4.25. So, $h^*(G|_{S_r^{\boxtimes}}) = \infty$ and since $h^*(T) = h^*(T^N)$ for every T , we have also $h^*(G^N|_{S_r^{\boxtimes}}) = \infty$. Then $h^*(F) \geq h^*(F|_{S_r^{\boxtimes}}) = h^*(G^N|_{S_r^{\boxtimes}}) = \infty$.

We have shown that, for every continuous map F on X , either $h^*(F) = 0$ or $h^*(F) = \infty$ and so the proposition is proved. \square

5. A MAP $T : X_1 \rightarrow X_1$ WITH $h^*(T) = \log 2$

Recall that in the construction of the continuum X with $S(X) = \{0, \infty\}$ we started with the auxiliary system (X_1, T) such that $h^*(T) = \infty$. The (disconnected) space X_1 consisted of two parts. The first part was a Cook continuum (with identity on it), the second one was just one orbit x_0, x_1, \dots approaching the first part. Having defined the system (X_1, T) , for each m we have ‘joined’ the points x_m and x_{m+1} by a continuum D_m in the form of a sequence of Cook continua and we obtained in such a way the continuum X with the required property $S(X) = \{0, \infty\}$.

In this section and the next one, we are going to construct a continuum $X \subseteq \mathbb{R}^3$ with $S(X) = \{0, \log 2\}$ in a similar way; we start with an auxiliary system (X_1, T) and then we add sequences of Cook continua. However, now the construction is more complicated. In fact, it is much easier to make all ‘nontrivial’ continuous selfmaps T to have $h^*(T)$ extremely large, i.e. equal to ∞ , than to have it equal exactly to $\log 2$, neither larger nor smaller.

In this section, we will first construct a system (X_1, T) with $h^*(T) = \log 2$ and then show that $h^*(T) = \log 2$.

5.1. Construction of a system (X_1, T) . The first part of our system (X_1, T) in \mathbb{R}^3 will be the one point compactification of $n \mapsto n + 1$ on \mathbb{Z} . Let its countable phase space A be a subset of the unit circle \mathbb{S}^1 lying in the vertical plane π_0 (containing the second and third axes), the first axis going to the right.¹²

So, let $a_i, i \in \mathbb{Z}$ and a_∞ be different points in \mathbb{S}^1 , with $\lim_{i \rightarrow \infty} a_i = \lim_{i \rightarrow \infty} a_{-i} = a_\infty$, see Figure 5.1, and put $A = \{a_i | i \in \mathbb{Z}\} \cup \{a_\infty\}$. Define the restriction of T to the set A by putting $T(a_i) = a_{i+1}$ and $T(a_\infty) = a_\infty$.

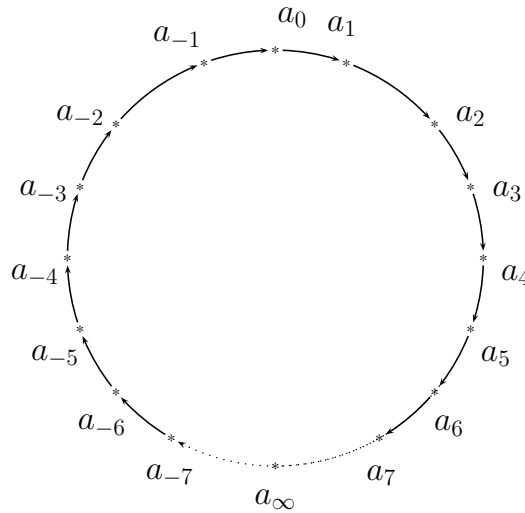


FIGURE 5.1. The system $(A, T|_A)$ lying in the vertical plane π_0

To keep under control the continuity of the map $T : X_1 \rightarrow X_1$, as well as for investigating IN-tuples, we will work with neighbourhoods (in \mathbb{R}^3) of the points $a_i, i \in \mathbb{Z}$ and a_∞ . For each $k \in \mathbb{N}$ fix a family of *pairwise disjoint* open sets $U^k(a_i) \ni a_i, i \in \mathbb{Z}$ such that $U^k(a_i)$ is the product of the interval $(-1/3k, 1/3k)$ and a small open disk in π_0 centered at a_i , such that

$$\text{diam}(U^k(a_i)) < 1/k \quad \text{and} \quad U^{k+1}(a_i) \subseteq U^k(a_i) \quad \text{for every } k \text{ and } i.$$

¹²We think of \mathbb{R}^3 as the product $(-\infty, \infty) \times \pi_0$, each point $z \in \mathbb{R}^3$ being uniquely determined by its projections $P_1(z)$ and $P_2(z)$ into $(-\infty, \infty)$ and π_0 , respectively.

Choose also a neighbourhood $U^1(a_\infty)$ of a_∞ such that

$$U^1(a_\infty) \cap U^1(a_j) = \emptyset \quad \text{for } |j| \leq 3. \quad (5.1)$$

The second part of (X_1, T) will be formed by just one trajectory x_0, x_1, \dots lying in $(0, 1] \times A$, with $T(x_i) = x_{i+1}$, approaching our set A . In particular, we choose

$$(\text{the distance of } x_j \text{ from } \pi_0) \searrow 0 \quad \text{as } j \rightarrow \infty. \quad (5.2)$$

Since the set of all accumulation points of this trajectory will be the set A , all sequence entropy tuples of (X_1, T) , if any, will consist only of points of the set A . So, we claim that to get $h^*(T) = \log 2$, it will be sufficient to fulfill the following list of requirements:

- (1) (a_0, a_1) is an IN-pair for T ,
- (2) (a_0, a_j) is not an IN-pair for T for any $|j| \geq 2$,
- (3) (a_0, a_∞) is not an IN-pair for T .

Indeed, (1) implies $h^*(T) \geq \log 2$. On the other hand, (2) and (3) imply that there is no intrinsic IN-tuple of length 3. In fact, suppose that such a tuple of length 3 exists. It does not contain a_∞ , otherwise there is also an IN-pair of the form (a_i, a_∞) for some $i \in \mathbb{Z}$, but then, using Proposition 2.6(a) or Proposition 2.7(b), also $(T^{-i}(a_i), T^{-i}(a_\infty)) = (a_0, a_\infty)$ is an intrinsic IN-pair, contradicting (3). So, if an intrinsic IN-tuple of length 3 exists, it is of the form (a_i, a_j, a_k) , where $i < j < k$ are integers. By Proposition 2.6(a) or Proposition 2.7(b), $(T^{-i}(a_i), T^{-i}(a_k)) = (a_0, a_{k-i})$ is an intrinsic IN-pair and since $|k - i| \geq 2$, we have a contradiction with (2).

To fulfill the three above requirements, it is obviously sufficient to fulfill the following two requirements:

- (R1) For every k , the tuple $(U^k(a_0), U^k(a_1))$ has an independence set of times of cardinality $k + 1$ (this is equivalent to (1)).
- (R2) The tuple $(U^1(a_0), U^1(a_j))$ does not have an independence set of times of cardinality 5 whenever $|j| \geq 2$ or $j = \infty$ (this implies (2) and (3)).

Now we are going to describe the sequence x_0, x_1, \dots , i.e. the trajectory of x_0 under T . It will be a concatenation of infinitely many finite sequences, some of them will be called *blocks*, the others will be called *outer gaps*:

$$x_0, x_1, \dots = \text{1st block, 1st outer gap, 2nd block, 2nd outer gap, } \dots \quad (5.3)$$

Further, for every k , the k -th block will be a concatenation of finite sequences called *pieces* and *inner gaps*:

$$k\text{-th block} = \text{1st piece, 1st inner gap, 2nd piece, } \dots, (2^{k+1} - 1)\text{st inner gap, } (2^{k+1})\text{-th piece.} \quad (5.4)$$

A proper choice of pieces will ensure (R1) and proper choices of inner and outer gaps will ensure (R2).

The k -th block and the k -th outer gap will be denoted by $B(k)$ and $OG(k)$, respectively, $k = 1, 2, \dots$. The k -th outer gap $OG(k)$ will have length $og(k)$. The pieces in the k -th block (denoted by $P(k, l)$, $1 \leq l \leq 2^{k+1}$) will be finite sequences of the same lengths $n_k^k + 1$. The t -th inner gap in k -th block (denoted by $IG(k, t)$, $1 \leq t \leq 2^{k+1} - 1$) will have length $ig(k, t)$. (The detailed definitions of $n_k^k, ig(k, t), og(k), P(k, l), IG(k, t), OG(k)$ will be given later.) Thus, the structure of the trajectory is as in Table 3, the 3rd row shows the lengths.

B(1)							OG(1)	...	B(k)			...
P(1,1)	IG(1,1)	P(1,2)	IG(1,2)	P(1,3)	IG(1,3)	P(1,4)		...	P(k,1)	...	P(k,2 ^{k+1})	...
$n_1^1 + 1$	$ig(1,1)$	$n_1^1 + 1$	$ig(1,2)$	$n_1^1 + 1$	$ig(1,3)$	$n_1^1 + 1$	$og(1)$	...	$n_k^k + 1$	...	$n_k^k + 1$	...

TABLE 3. Blocks, pieces, gaps and their lengths

For each k , the 2^{k+1} pieces in the k -th block will be designed so that (R1) be fulfilled for this k . Denote

$$F(k) = \{0, 1\}^{\{0,1,2,\dots,k\}} = \{s_l : 1 \leq l \leq 2^{k+1}\}, \quad s_1 = (0, 0, \dots, 0), \dots, s_{2^{k+1}} = (1, 1, \dots, 1). \quad (5.5)$$

So, for each k we fix, once and for all, a choice of 2^{k+1} functions s_l . They can be considered as $(k+1)$ -tuples of zeros and ones. Say, let them be ordered from s_1 to $s_{2^{k+1}}$ lexicographically (then s_1 and $s_{2^{k+1}}$ are constant, as written above).¹³

For each l , the piece $P(k, l)$ will be a finite sequence of length $n_k^k + 1$ of the form

$$P(k, l) = x_j, x_{j+1}, \dots, x_{j+n_1^k}, \dots, x_{j+n_2^k}, \dots, x_{j+n_k^k} \quad (5.6)$$

where $j = j(k, l) \geq 0$ will depend on both k and l , but n_1^k, \dots, n_k^k only on k and not on l ,¹⁴ such that

$$x_j \in U^k(a_{s_l(0)}), \quad T^{n_i^k} x_j = x_{j+n_i^k} \in U^k(a_{s_l(i)}), \quad 1 \leq i \leq k. \quad (5.7)$$

Equivalently, if we put $n_0^k := 0$, this means that $x_j \in \bigcap_{i=0}^k T^{-n_i^k} U^k(a_{s_l(i)})$. Since for each $l = 1, \dots, 2^{k+1}$ there will be a piece $P(k, l)$ corresponding to s_l , the set

$$N(k) = \{n_0^k = 0, n_1^k, \dots, n_k^k\} \quad (5.8)$$

will be an independence set of times of length $k+1$ for $(U^k(a_0), U^k(a_1))$.

We see from (5.6) that the piece $P(k, l)$ consists of k shorter sequences, called *winds* :

$$W_1^{(k,l)} = x_j (= x_{j+n_0^k}), x_{j+1}, \dots, x_{j+n_1^k}, \quad \dots, \quad W_k^{(k,l)} = x_{j+n_{k-1}^k}, \dots, x_{j+n_k^k}. \quad (5.9)$$

The wind $W_i^{(k,l)}$ starts in $x_{j+n_{i-1}^k} \in U^k(a_{s_l(i-1)})$ and ends in $x_{j+n_i^k} \in U^k(a_{s_l(i)})$. Put $w_i^k = |W_i^{(k,l)}|$.¹⁵ The following table shows the structure of $P(k, l)$. The second row shows the function (tuple) to which the piece corresponds, the last row contains the lengths of the winds.

$P(1, 1)$	$P(1, 2)$	$P(1, 3)$	$P(1, 4)$	...
$s_1 = (0, 0)$	$s_2 = (0, 1)$	$s_3 = (1, 0)$	$s_4 = (1, 1)$	...
$W_1^{(1,1)}$	$W_1^{(1,2)}$	$W_1^{(1,3)}$	$W_1^{(1,4)}$	...
$w_1^1 = n_1^1 + 1$	w_1^1	w_1^1	w_1^1	...
$P(k, l) = x_j, \dots, x_{j+n_1^k}, \dots, x_{j+n_2^k}, \dots, x_{j+n_k^k}$				...
$s_l = (s_l(0), s_l(1), \dots, s_l(k))$				...
$W_1^{(k,l)}$	$W_2^{(k,l)}$	...	$W_k^{(k,l)}$	...
$w_1^k = n_1^k - n_0^k + 1 = n_1^k + 1$	$w_2^k = n_2^k - n_1^k + 1$	...	$w_k^k = n_k^k - n_{k-1}^k + 1$	...

TABLE 4. Winds and their lengths

Note that each of the elements $x_{j+n_1^k}, \dots, x_{j+n_{k-1}^k}$ belongs to two of these winds. So, the winds in $P(k, l)$ are not disjoint, two consecutive winds have one point in common. However, we will abuse terminology and we still will say that $P(k, l)$ is a concatenation of these winds. The fact that $P(k, l)$ consists of k winds (though not pairwise disjoint) will also be expressed by saying that $P(k, l)$ ‘winds k -times around the set A ’.

We have seen that already the mere concatenation of the pieces

$$P(1, 1), \dots, P(1, 4), P(2, 1), \dots, P(2, 8), \dots, P(k, 1), \dots, P(k, 2^{k+1}), \dots$$

ensures (R1). Unfortunately, then there is a risk that $(U^1(a_0), U^1(a_j))$ for some $|j| \geq 2$ or $(U^1(a_0), U^1(a_\infty))$ will have an independence set of times of length 5. Therefore, to be sure that also (R2) is fulfilled, we are going to add the gaps as indicated above. Since the proof that the gaps will really have the required effect will need computations, we are going to describe the trajectory x_0, x_1, \dots in more details. We provide also pictures.

Our space X_1 will be a subset of $[0, 1] \times A \subseteq [0, 1] \times \pi_0$, so let P_1 and P_2 be the projections of $[0, 1] \times \pi_0$ onto $[0, 1]$ and π_0 , respectively. The trajectory x_0, x_1, \dots will be chosen such that

$$P_2(x_i) \in A, \quad i = 0, 1, 2, \dots, \quad \text{and} \quad P_1(x_i) \searrow 0 \quad (5.10)$$

¹³Since the functions s_l depend both on k and l , we should in fact write $s_{(k,l)}$ rather than just s_l . We abuse notation here hoping that no misunderstanding will arise.

¹⁴Therefore we write n_i^k rather than $n_i^{(k,l)}$.

¹⁵The wind $W_i^{(k,l)}$ depends on k, l and i but its length does not depend on l , therefore we write w_i^k rather than $w_i^{(k,l)}$.

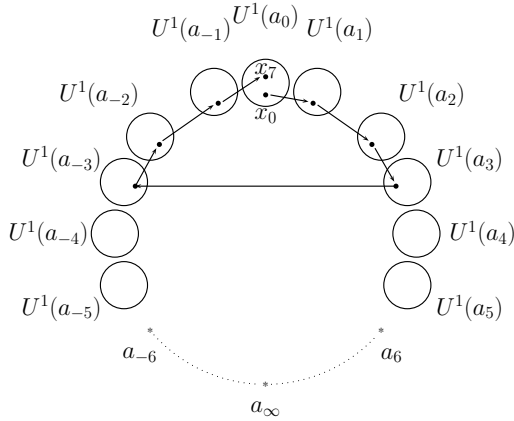


FIGURE 5.2. $P(1, 1) = \{x_0, x_1, \dots, x_7\}$

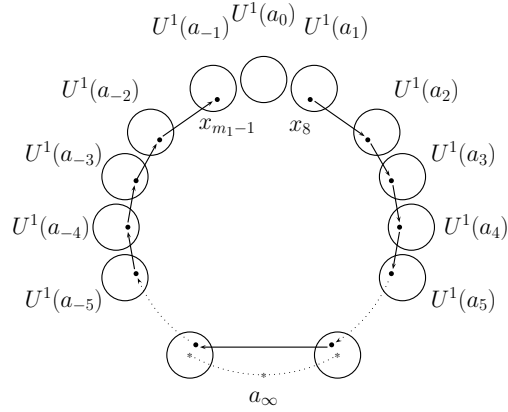


FIGURE 5.3. $IG(1, 1) = \{x_8, x_9, \dots, x_{m_1-1}\}$ with $m_1 - 8 = ig(1, 1)$

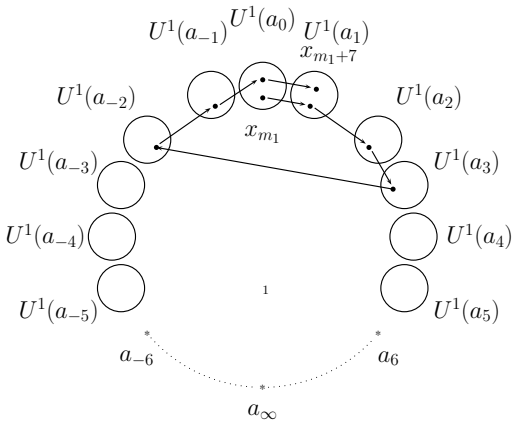


FIGURE 5.4. $P(1, 2) = \{x_{m_1}, x_{m_1+1}, \dots, x_{m_1+7}\}$

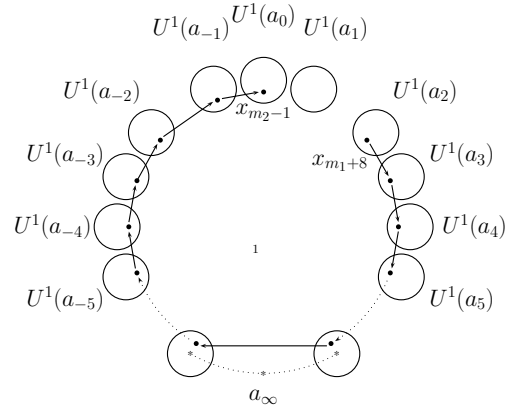


FIGURE 5.5. $IG(1, 2) = \{x_{m_1+8}, x_{m_1+9}, \dots, x_{m_2-1}\}$ with $m_2 - m_1 - 8 = ig(1, 2)$

and so all the accumulation points of the trajectory x_0, x_1, \dots will be in A .

Recall that, to ensure (R1), the first block $B(1)$ has 2^2 pieces. Each piece $P(1, l)$, corresponding to an $s_l \in \{0, 1\}^{\{0, 1\}}$, satisfies (5.7) for $k = 1$. We have $n_0^1 = 0$ and choose $n_1^1 = 7$. Further, $s_1 = (0, 0)$, $s_2 = (0, 1)$, $s_3 = (1, 0)$ and $s_4 = (1, 1)$. Figures 5.2-5.9 show the four pieces and the three inner gaps of the first block, and the first outer gap. We are going to explain how the pictures should be understood.

Let us start with Figure 5.2 which shows the piece $P(1, 1) = \{x_0, x_1, \dots, x_7\}$. We are looking at our system along the first axis (with the eyes at the point $+\infty$) and so what we see in that picture is in fact the projection onto the vertical plane π_0 . Thus, though we consider our ‘cylindrical’ neighbourhoods $U^1(a_i)$ of the points a_i , on the picture we can see only their projections onto π_0 , i.e. disks. However, we keep the notation $U^1(a_i)$ rather than $P_2(U^1(a_i))$. Similarly, we consider points $x_0, x_7 \in (0, 1] \times \{a_0\}$ but we can see only their projections onto π_0 , still keeping the notations x_0 and x_7 . Since $P_2(x_0) = P_2(x_7) = a_0 = P_2(a_0)$, the projections of both points x_0 and x_7 should be in the center of the corresponding disk. However, our rule when drawing the picture is that if the projections of points we consider are exactly the centers of the disks, we draw them as different points in that disk, not to loose the lucidity of the picture. So, Figure 5.2

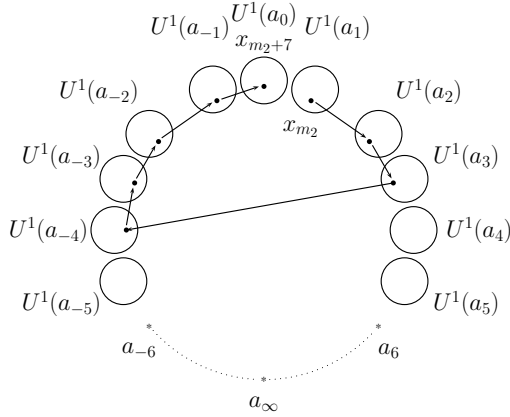


FIGURE 5.6. $P(1, 3) = \{x_{m_2}, x_{m_2+1}, \dots, x_{m_2+7}\}$

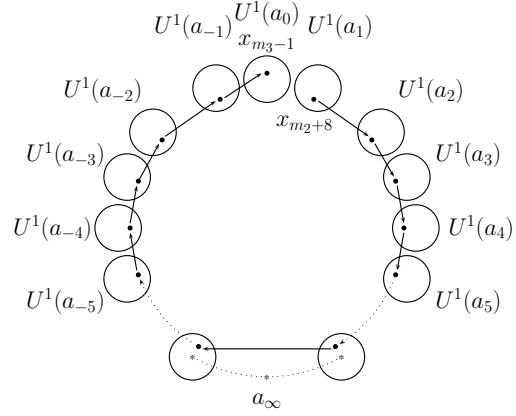


FIGURE 5.7. $IG(1, 3) = \{x_{m_2+8}, x_{m_2+9}, \dots, x_{m_3-1}\}$ with $m_3 - m_2 - 8 = ig(1, 3)$

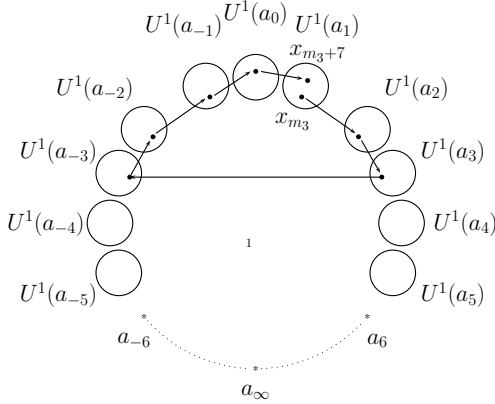


FIGURE 5.8. $P(1, 4) = \{x_{m_3}, x_{m_3+1}, \dots, x_{m_3+7}\}$

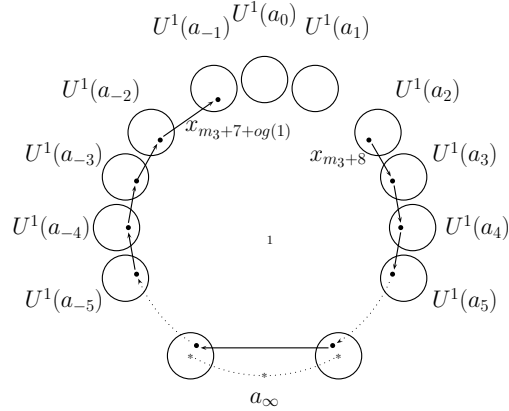


FIGURE 5.9. $OG(1) = \{x_{m_3+8}, x_{m_3+9}, \dots, x_{m_3+7+og(1)}\}$

means: $x_0, x_7 \in (0, 1] \times \{a_0\}$, $x_1 \in (0, 1] \times \{a_1\}$, \dots , $x_4 \in (0, 1] \times \{a_{-3}\}$, \dots . Further, arrows of course mean that $T(x_i) = x_{i+1}$ for $i = 0, 1, \dots, 6$. Recall also that $P_1(x_0) > \dots > P_1(x_7)$, see (5.10).

The first piece $P(1, 1)$ is concatenated with the first inner gap $IG(1, 1) = \{x_8, x_9, \dots, x_{m_1-1}\}$, see Figure 5.3. Here $x_8 \in (0, 1] \times \{a_1\}$. Of course $T(x_7) = x_8$, but we do not draw the corresponding arrow (since we even do not draw x_7 in Figure 5.3). We continue this way, alternating pieces and inner blocks until the first block is completed, see Figures 5.4-5.8. Finally, before starting the construction of the second block, we add the first outer gap $OG(1) = \{x_{m_3+8}, x_{m_3+9}, \dots, x_{m_3+7+og(1)}\}$, see Figure 5.9.

The pictures show the role of those finite sequences whose concatenation gives the T -trajectory of x_0 and they also show why T is continuous. Let us go to details.

The pieces $P(1, 1)$, $P(1, 2)$, $P(1, 3)$ and $P(1, 4)$ give the existence of points x_0 , x_{m_1} , x_{m_2} and x_{m_3} , respectively, such that x_0 is in $U^1(a_0)$ at time $n_0^1 = 0$ and again in $U^1(a_0)$ at time $n_1^1 = 7$, x_{m_1} is in $U^1(a_0)$ at time $n_0^1 = 0$ and in $U^1(a_1)$ at time $n_1^1 = 7$, x_{m_2} is in $U^1(a_1)$ at time $n_0^1 = 0$ and in $U^1(a_0)$ at time $n_1^1 = 7$, and x_{m_3} is in $U^1(a_1)$ at time $n_0^1 = 0$ and again in $U^1(a_1)$ at time $n_1^1 = 7$.

If $k > 1$, the structure of the pieces in $B(k)$ is more complicated than in the case $k = 1$. To make the life of the reader easier, we add one more picture. For instance, consider $k = 2$. Let the corresponding independence set of times be, say, $\{n_0^2 = 0, n_1^2 = 9, n_2^2 = 23\}$ (this is just for an illustration, later in fact the numbers n_1^2 and n_2^2 will be chosen much larger). Further, consider for instance $l = 6$. The piece $P(2, 6)$, see (5.6) and Figure 5.10, corresponds to $s_6 = (1, 0, 1)$. So, at time $n_0^2 = 0$ the piece starts at $U^2(a_1)$ (because $s_6(0) = 1$), at time $n_1^2 = 9$ it visits $U^2(a_0)$ (because $s_6(1) = 0$) and at time $n_2^2 = 23$ it ends in $U^2(a_1)$ (because $s_6(2) = 1$).

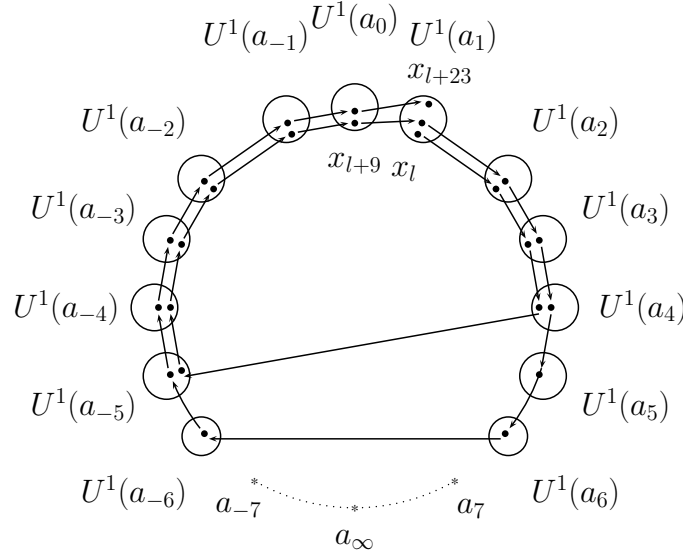


FIGURE 5.10. The piece $P(2, 6)$ corresponding to $s_6 = (1, 0, 1)$, with $\{n_0^2 = 0, n_1^2 = 9, n_2^2 = 23\}$. It consists of two winds $W_1^{(2,6)}$ and $W_2^{(2,6)}$ with lengths $w_1^2 = 10$ and $w_2^2 = 15$.

We want that $T: X_1 \rightarrow X_1$ be continuous. Therefore, when constructing the trajectory x_0, x_1, \dots approaching the set A (where T has already been defined), we use the general rule that the P_2 -projections of consecutive points x_i, x_{i+1} are the consecutive points of A (consecutive in the sense of $T|_A$ -dynamics). In rare exceptions from this rule the points x_i, x_{i+1} are either ‘far away’ from the plane π_0 (such as x_3 and x_4 in Figure 5.2) or they both are ‘close’ to the fixed point a_∞ . Always, when x_i, x_{i+1} is such an exception, the point x_i is on the ‘right side’ of a_∞ and x_{i+1} is on the ‘left side’ of a_∞ (see e.g. the ‘jump’ from x_3 on the ‘right side’ of a_∞ to x_4 on the ‘left side’ of a_∞ in Figure 5.2 or two such ‘jumps’ in Figure 5.10). In fact we will have infinitely many exceptions from what we call the general rule, but they will be closer and closer to the fixed point a_∞ . Therefore the continuity of T will not be violated.

The inner gap $IG(1, l)$ is inserted between the pieces $P(1, l)$ and $P(1, l + 1)$ and so, following the just mentioned general rule, we take care that $P_2(\text{first point of } IG(1, l)) = T|_A(P_2(\text{last point of } P(1, l)))$ and $P_2(\text{first point of } P(1, l + 1)) = T|_A(P_2(\text{last point of } IG(1, l)))$ (check this in our pictures).

The outer gap $OG(1)$ is used for linking the blocks $B(1)$ and $B(2)$. So, the first point in $OG(1)$ is x_{m_3+8} , the first point in $B(2)$ is $x_{m_3+og(1)+8}$ and when choosing their positions we keep our general rule mentioned above, cf. Figures 5.8 and 5.9.

The constructions of $B(2)$ and $OG(2)$ and, generally, $B(k)$ and $OG(k)$ go in an analogous way. However, note that in $B(1)$ each of the pieces winds around A only once (i.e., it consists of just one wind). Each of the inner gaps in the first block, as well as the first outer gap, also wind around A once. When constructing $B(k)$ and $OG(k)$, all the gaps will still wind around A only once (therefore we do not introduce the notion of a wind in a gap), but each of the pieces in $B(k)$ will k times wind around A . So, each piece in $B(k)$ consists of k winds. This is because the role of the pieces in $B(k)$ is to ensure that there exists an independence set $\{n_0^k = 0, n_1^k, \dots, n_k^k\}$ of times of length $k + 1$ for $(U^k(a_0), U^k(a_1))$. Our way how to do that is as follows.

Given $s_l \in \{0, 1\}^{\{0,1,\dots,k\}}$, the piece $P(k, l)$ starts in $U^k(a_{s_l(0)})$ at time $n_0^k = 0$, then winds once around A to come to $U^k(a_{s_l(1)})$ at time n_1^k (this is the last point of the wind $W_1^{(k,l)}$ and the first point of the wind $W_2^{(k,l)}$), again winds once around A to come to $U^k(a_{s_l(2)})$ at time n_2^k (this was the wind $W_2^{(k,l)}$), and so on, finally winds around A to come to $U^k(a_{s_l(k)})$ at time n_k^k (this was the wind $W_k^{(k,l)}$). For an example see Figure 5.10 where the piece $P(2, 6)$ consists of two winds.

Now the reader has a global picture of the system (X_1, T) .

Before going to a more detailed specification of parameters in our construction, we introduce some notation. Let Y_k be the concatenation of $B(k)$ and $OG(k)$. If we abuse the notation (making no difference between a finite sequence and its set of values), then

$$Y_k = B(k) \cup OG(k)$$

and the second part of X_1 , i.e. the orbit of x_0 , is the set $Y = \bigcup_{k=1}^{\infty} Y_k$. For $k = 1, 2, \dots$, the set (or the finite sequence) Y_k will be called the k -th level of Y . So, by saying that a point is in the k -th level we mean that it belongs to Y_k . Further, let \mathcal{S} be a finite subsequence of the trajectory x_0, x_1, \dots (say, \mathcal{S} is a block, a piece, a gap or a wind). Consider the (finite) set

$$\text{pre}(\mathcal{S}) = \{x_i : 0 \leq i < s, \text{ where } x_s \text{ is the first element of } \mathcal{S}\}.$$

We will call it *the set of all predecessors of \mathcal{S}* . If $s \geq 1$, the point x_{s-1} will be called *the immediate predecessor of \mathcal{S}* .

Let us also adopt the convention that

- $a \gg b$, or $b \ll a$, means that $a > 100 \times b$, and
- $(a_i)_{i=1}^N \uparrow\uparrow$ and $(a_i)_{i=1}^{\infty} \uparrow\uparrow$ mean that in the corresponding sequence we have $a_i \ll a_{i+1}$ for each considered i (except of $i = N$ in the first case). Moreover, in each of these cases we will sometimes write just $(a_i) \uparrow\uparrow$.

If S is a finite set or a finite injective sequence, we will denote by $|S|$ the number of points in S .

For proving that $h^*(T)$ is $\log 2$ (and not higher), we still need to specify appropriately some of the parameters, namely, for $k \in \mathbb{N}$, the *independence set of times* $N(k) = \{n_0^k = 0, n_1^k, n_2^k \dots, n_k^k\}$, the *outer gap length* $og(k)$ and the *inner gap lengths* $ig(k, j)$, $1 \leq j \leq 2^{k+1} - 1$. When imaging how we construct the trajectory x_0, x_1, \dots , cf. Table 3 and (5.6), we see that we just need to specify the numbers $n_1^1, ig(1, 1), ig(1, 2), ig(1, 3), og(1), n_1^2, n_2^2, ig(2, 1), \dots, ig(2, 7), og(2), n_1^3, n_2^3, n_3^3, ig(3, 1), \dots$. Notice that to specify the numbers n_i^k is equivalent, cf. Table 4, with specifying the lengths of all winds. However, note that the lengths of the winds in the pieces $P(k, l)$ do not depend on l and so we will, for each k , specify only the lengths of the winds $W_1^{(k,1)}, \dots, W_k^{(k,1)}$, which will be equivalent with specification of the numbers n_1^k, \dots, n_k^k . Thus, our task is to specify $w_1^1, ig(1, 1), ig(1, 2), ig(1, 3), og(1), w_1^2, w_2^2, ig(2, 1), \dots, ig(2, 7), og(2), w_1^3, w_2^3, w_3^3, ig(3, 1), \dots$. We need continuity of T and $h^*(T) = \log 2$ but in spite of this we have much freedom in specification of those numbers.

Inductively, we require only the following (for $k = 1, 2, \dots$):

- (L1) $w_1^1 = 8$ or, equivalently, $n_1^1 = 7$.
- (L2) $|IG| \gg |\text{pre}(IG)|$ whenever IG is an inner gap.
- (L3) $|OG| \gg |\text{pre}(OG)|$ whenever OG is an outer gap.
- (L4) $|W| \gg |\text{pre}(W)|$ whenever W is a wind in the first piece of a block. (Recall that the lengths of the winds in $P(k, l)$ are the same as those in $P(k, 1)$.)

The pieces and the gaps are formed by consecutive points of the trajectory x_0, x_1, \dots , so we may for instance write $P(k, l)$ as $x_j, x_{j+1}, \dots, x_{j+|P(k,l)|-1}$. Here j depends on k and l but we do not need to know the exact formula for it. We simply choose separately the pieces, the inner gaps and the outer gaps, then concatenate them as in (5.3) and (5.4), and denote the sequence we obtain as x_0, x_1, \dots . So, it will be convenient to adopt an alternative notation. Instead of “ x ”, we will use “ y ” for elements in pieces, “ z ” for elements in inner gaps and “ ω ” for elements in outer gaps. Moreover, the indices will indicate to which block or gap the element belongs to. The alternative notation can be seen in the next table.

$P(1,1)$	$IG(1,1)$	$P(1,2)$
x_0, x_1, \dots, x_7	$x_8, x_9, \dots, x_{m_1-1}$	$x_{m_1}, x_{m_1+1}, \dots, x_{m_1+7}$
$y_{(1,1),0}, y_{(1,1),1}, \dots, y_{(1,1),n_1^1}$	$z_{(1,1),1}, z_{(1,1),2}, \dots, z_{(1,1),ig(1,1)}$	$y_{(1,2),0}, y_{(1,2),1}, \dots, y_{(1,2),n_1^1}$
$IG(1,2)$	$P(1,3)$	$IG(1,3)$
$x_{m_1+8}, x_{m_1+9}, \dots, x_{m_2-1}$	$x_{m_2}, x_{m_2+1}, \dots, x_{m_2+7}$	$x_{m_2+8}, x_{m_2+9}, \dots, x_{m_3-1}$
$z_{(1,2),1}, z_{(1,2),2}, \dots, z_{(1,2),ig(1,2)}$	$y_{(1,3),0}, y_{(1,3),1}, \dots, y_{(1,3),n_1^1}$	$z_{(1,3),1}, z_{(1,3),2}, \dots, z_{(1,3),ig(1,3)}$
$P(1,4)$	$OG(1)$	\dots
$x_{m_3}, x_{m_3+1}, \dots, x_{m_3+7}$	$x_{m_3+8}, x_{m_3+9}, \dots, x_{m_3+7+og(1)}$	\dots
$y_{(1,4),0}, y_{(1,4),1}, \dots, y_{(1,4),n_1^1}$	$\omega_{1,1}, \omega_{1,2}, \dots, \omega_{1,og(1)}$	\dots

TABLE 5. Alternative notation

So, $z_{(k,l),t}$ is the t -th point in the l -th inner gap of the k -th block and $\omega_{k,t}$ is the t -th point in the k -th outer gap. In both cases t starts to run from 1. In contrast, the piece $P(k,l)$ with length $n_k^k + 1$ has its elements denoted by $y_{(k,l),t}$ where t runs from 0 to n_k^k . Then (5.7) becomes

$$y_{(k,l),0} \in U^k(a_{s_l(0)}) \quad \text{and} \quad T^{n_k^k}(y_{(k,l),0}) = y_{(k,l),n_k^k} \in U^k(a_{s_l(i)}), \quad 1 \leq i \leq k. \quad (5.11)$$

Recall that all the elements of pieces and gaps are in $(0, 1] \times A$ and so it will be convenient to adopt the convention (in fact used already above, say in Figures 5.2-5.9) that

$$b \in U^k(a_j) \quad \text{means} \quad b \in U^k(a_j) \quad \text{and} \quad P_2(b) = a_j. \quad (5.12)$$

Recall that $P(k,l)$ (corresponding to $s_l \in \{0, 1\}^{\{0,1,2,\dots,k\}}$) will wind k -times around A , i.e. it will ‘jump’ from the ‘right side’ of a_∞ to the ‘left side’ of a_∞ k -times. As we mentioned above, when $k \rightarrow \infty$, the jumps will be performed closer and closer to a_∞ to ensure the continuity of T . For instance, in $P(1,2)$, see Figure 5.4, the jump is from $U^1(a_3)$ to $U^1(a_{-2})$ and we put $j_1^{(1,2)} = 3$ and $p_1^{(1,2)} = 2$. In general, given k and l , the piece $P(k,l)$ performs k jumps and so we will have k pairs of positive *jump numbers*, namely $j_q^{(k,l)}, p_q^{(k,l)}$ for $q = 1, \dots, k$. The meaning is that

$$\text{the } q\text{-th jump in } P(k,l) \text{ is performed from } U^k(a_{j_q^{(k,l)}}) \text{ to } U^k(a_{-p_q^{(k,l)}}), \quad (5.13)$$

i.e., this jump starts at a point x_m and ends at a point x_{m+1} , with $P_2(x_m) = a_{j_q^{(k,l)}}$ and $P_2(x_{m+1}) = a_{-p_q^{(k,l)}}$. In Figure 5.10 we see the jump numbers $j_1^{(2,6)} = 4, p_1^{(2,6)} = 5$ and $j_2^{(2,6)} = 6, p_2^{(2,6)} = 6$.

The notion of jump numbers can analogously be introduced also for inner and outer gaps, but we will not need a notation for them. Notice that in all the above pictures of the inner gaps and outer gaps the jumps from the ‘right’ to the ‘left’ are ‘horizontal’, meaning that they are performed from $U^k(a_r)$ to $U^k(a_{-r})$ (the both jump numbers are the same, equal to some r), and in all the above pictures of pieces we have ‘horizontal’ or ‘almost horizontal’ jumps, meaning that $|j_q^{(k,l)} - p_q^{(k,l)}| \leq 1$. Similarly as in the pictures, after fixing the lengths of all gaps and winds, see (L1-4), the jumps can be chosen in such a way that all the jumps (in pieces and in inner and outer gaps) are almost horizontal.

Now take into account that, by (L1-4), the lengths of the winds in the pieces of a block $B(k)$ tend to infinity when $k \rightarrow \infty$. Since all the jumps are almost horizontal, this clearly implies that the jump numbers $j_q^{(k,l)}$ and $p_q^{(k,l)}$, for $1 \leq l \leq k$, tend to ∞ when $k \rightarrow \infty$. Similarly, by (L1-4), the lengths $ig(k,l)$ of inner gaps as well as the lengths $og(k,l)$ of outer gaps tend to ∞ when $k \rightarrow \infty$. Since the gaps wind around A only once and the jumps in the gaps are almost horizontal, these jumps are performed closer and closer to a_∞ when $k \rightarrow \infty$. It follows that T is continuous.

5.2. Proof of $h^*(T) = \log 2$. We have finished the construction of (X_1, T) and we already know that (X_1, T) fulfills (R1). It remains to show that also (R2) is fulfilled.

We embark on a complicated proof that (R2) is fulfilled. To find an idea, suppose, on the contrary, that $l_1 < l_2 < l_3 < l_4 < l_5$ is an independence set of times of length 5 for $(U^1(a_0), U^1(a_j))$. What does it mean

for $\{l_1, l_2, l_3, l_4, l_5\}$? Among others, there exists a point $z \in \{x_0, x_1, \dots\}$ such that

$$T^{l_i} z \in U^1(a_0), \quad i = 1, 2, 3, 4, 5.$$

However, below we show that there are severe restrictions for the differences $l_{i+1} - l_i$, $i = 1, 2, 3, 4$. These are iterative distances, with respect to T , between the above points (the points in the snake are denoted as $x_i = T^i(x_0)$ and then the *iterative distance* between x_s and x_{s+t} , $t \geq 0$, is defined to be t).

Thus, we are going to investigate the iterative distances between elements of the snake lying in $U^1(a_0)$. Notice the following. It follows from the construction of x_0, x_1, \dots , cf. Figures 5.2-5.10, that if $x_i \in U^1(a_0)$, then either x_i belongs to some piece $P(k, l)$ or, if it belongs to a gap, it is the last point of an inner gap and the next piece starts in $U^1(a_1)$. It cannot be the last point of an outer gap because $P(k, 1)$ always starts in $U^1(a_0)$ (in fact, $s_1 = (0, \dots)$ and not $(1, \dots)$, see (5.5)). Said in a different way, by the construction the outer gaps do not contain points from $U^1(a_0)$. Therefore it will be convenient to introduce the following notion.

For any $k \in \mathbb{N}$ and $1 \leq l \leq 2^{k+1}$, we denote by $\tilde{P}(k, l)$ the l -th part in the k -th level defined as follows:

- If $y_{(k,l),0} \in U^1(a_0)$, then set $\tilde{P}(k, l) = P(k, l)$;
- If $y_{(k,l),0} \in U^1(a_1)$, then set $\tilde{P}(k, l) = P(k, l) \cup \{x_{j-1}\}$ where $x_j = y_{(k,l),0}$.

The point x_{j-1} with $x_j = y_{(k,l),0}$ does not exist if $k = l = 1$ (i.e. if $j = 0$). However, by the construction, $y_{(1,1),0} \in U^1(a_0)$ and so $\tilde{P}(1, 1) = P(1, 1)$ is defined. More generally, since $P(k, 1)$ always starts in $U^1(a_0)$, we have

$$\tilde{P}(k, 1) = P(k, 1), \quad k = 1, 2, \dots \quad (5.14)$$

As already shown above,

$$\text{if } x_i \in U^1(a_0), \text{ then } x_i \in \tilde{P}(k, l) \text{ for some } k \text{ and } l. \quad (5.15)$$

Lemma 5.1. *Let $k > 0, l \in \{1, \dots, 2^{k+1}\}$.*

(1) *The piece $P(k, l)$ is of the form*

$$P(k, l) = x_j, x_{j+1}, \dots, x_{j+n_1^k}, \dots, x_{j+n_2^k}, \dots, x_{j+n_k^k}.$$

The list of all points from $\tilde{P}(k, l)$ which belong to $U^1(a_0)$ is then

$$\text{one of } x_{j+n_0^k}, x_{j+n_0^k-1}, \text{ one of } x_{j+n_1^k}, x_{j+n_1^k-1}, \dots, \text{ one of } x_{j+n_k^k}, x_{j+n_k^k-1} \quad (5.16)$$

(here $n_0^k = 0$ and “one” means “exactly one”). If $l = 1$ then in fact $x_{j+n_0^k} = x_j$ belongs to $U^1(a_0)$. If $s_l \in F(k)$ is the function corresponding to $P(k, l)$, then we can write

$$\tilde{P}(k, l) \cap U^1(a_0) = \{x_{j+n_0^k-s_l(0)}, x_{j+n_1^k-s_l(1)}, \dots, x_{j+n_k^k-s_l(k)}\}. \quad (5.17)$$

(2) *If two points in $\tilde{P}(k, l) \cap U^1(a_0)$ have iterative distance $t > 0$, then*

$$t \in \{n_c^k - n_d^k - 1, n_c^k - n_d^k, n_c^k - n_d^k + 1\} \text{ for some } 0 \leq d < c \leq k$$

and no other pair of points in $\tilde{P}(k, l) \cap U^1(a_0)$ has the same iterative distance t .

Proof. (1) As in (5.6), we have $P(k, l) = x_j, x_{j+1}, \dots, x_{j+n_1^k}, \dots, x_{j+n_2^k}, \dots, x_{j+n_k^k}$. It immediately follows from the construction of the winds in $P(k, l)$ that the list of all points from $\tilde{P}(k, l)$ which belong to $U^1(a_0)$ is (5.16). If $l = 1$ then (5.15) and (5.14) exclude the point $x_{j+n_0^k-1}$ from the list. To be more precise, for each $c \in \{0, 1, \dots, k\}$ we have $x_{j+n_c^k} \in U^1(a_{s_l(c)})$ and so

$$x_{j+n_c^k-s_l(c)} \in U^1(a_0).$$

This means that the list of all elements of $\tilde{P}(k, l) \cap U^1(a_0)$ is (5.17).

(2) So, if $t > 0$ and x_s, x_{s+t} are two points in $\tilde{P}(k, l) \cap U^1(a_0)$, there are $0 \leq d < c \leq k$ such that x_s is one of $x_{j+n_d^k}, x_{j+n_d^k-1}$ and x_{s+t} is one of $x_{j+n_c^k}, x_{j+n_c^k-1}$. Hence the three possibilities for t .

Thus, in each of the pairs $x_{j+n_d^k}, x_{j+n_d^k-1}$ and $x_{j+n_c^k}, x_{j+n_c^k-1}$, *exactly* one of the points is in $U^1(a_0)$ and their iterative distance is t . Therefore, if $p < q$ and x_p, x_q is *another* pair of points in $\tilde{P}(k, l) \cap U^1(a_0)$, i.e.

in the list (5.16), then either $x_p \notin \{x_{j+n_d^k}, x_{j+n_d^k-1}\}$ or $x_q \notin \{x_{j+n_c^k}, x_{j+n_c^k-1}\}$. Since by (L4) the lengths of the winds in $P(k, l)$ satisfy the inequalities

$$n_1^k + 1 \ll n_2^k - n_1^k + 1 \ll \dots \ll n_k^k - n_{k-1}^k + 1 ,$$

the iterative distance $q - p$ of x_q and x_p is different from t . \square

Notice that, in notation from Lemma 5.1,

$$E(k, l) = \{x_j, x_{j+n_1^k}, \dots, x_{j+n_k^k}\}$$

is the set of the *endpoints of the winds* in $P(k, l)$. By Lemma 5.1(1), the points of $U^1(a_0) \cap \tilde{P}(k, l)$ *almost coincide* with the endpoints of the winds. By saying that two points almost coincide, we mean that their iterative distance is at most one.

Due to the construction, the independence is ‘caused’ by the trajectory of x_0 , the points from the head A are not those points which visit a tuple of neighbourhoods in prescribed times. Assume again that $\{l_1, l_2, l_3\}$, with $l_1 < l_2 < l_3$, is an independence set of times of lengths 3 for $(U^1(a_0), U^1(a_j))$. Then we will have 2^3 different segments of trajectory with lengths $l_3 - l_1 + 1$ and corresponding to different choices of functions saying which of the sets $U^1(a_0), U^1(a_j)$ are to be visited in the times l_1, l_2, l_3 by a point appropriate for that choice. Since these segments have the same length, each one of them can be viewed as a ‘shift’ (along the trajectory x_0, x_1, \dots) of any other one.

Now it will be useful to think of the trajectory x_0, x_1, \dots as a sequence of points going from left to right, along the real line, with the distance 1 between every two consecutive elements of the trajectory. The reason is that then for $t > 0$ the iterative distance between x_s and x_{s+t} , which is t , is the same as the euclidean distance between them. Say, then a gap or a block is long if and only if it is long also in the sense of the euclidean metric on the real line. Another advantage is that we can speak on inner and outer gaps to the right of some block, or on all those elements of the trajectory which lie in $U^1(a_0)$ and are to the left of some element, and the like. Say, $\text{pre}(\mathcal{S})$ is the set of all elements which are to the left of \mathcal{S} (meaning, of course, to the left of every element of \mathcal{S}).

Notice that if $x_m \in U^1(a_0)$ then it has its right neighbour (immediate successor) in $U^1(a_0)$ and if $m > 0$ then it has also its left neighbour (immediate predecessor) in $U^1(a_0)$. If two points x_i, x_j belong to a finite subsequence \mathcal{F} of the trajectory x_0, x_1, \dots , we say that the pair x_i, x_j lies in \mathcal{F} (instead of saying that the pair (x_i, x_j) is an element of some cartesian product).

Let $x_i = T^i(x_0)$ and $x_j = T^j(x_0)$, $i \neq j$, be two different elements of the trajectory x_0, x_1, \dots . Then we say that the pair x_i, x_j is $U^1(a_0)$ -*shiftable*, or just that the two points are $U^1(a_0)$ -shiftable, if both x_i and x_j belong to $U^1(a_0)$ and there is $m \neq 0$ such that also both x_{i+m} and x_{j+m} belong to $U^1(a_0)$. More precisely, if this is true for some $m < 0$ or $m > 0$ we say that the pair x_i, x_j is $U^1(a_0)$ -*left shiftable* or $U^1(a_0)$ -*right shiftable*, respectively. The function sending each point x_k to the point x_{k+m} is called the *shift by m* (right shift or left shift, depending on whether $m > 0$ or $m < 0$, respectively).

We are going to study the space $\{x_0, x_1, \dots\}$ from the point of view of shiftable.

Lemma 5.2. *Let $s \geq 0$, $t > 0$ and $x_s, x_{s+t} \in U^1(a_0)$. If the points x_s and x_{s+t} belong to different blocks, then they are not $U^1(a_0)$ -left shiftable.*

Proof. Let $x_s \in B(p)$ and $x_{s+t} \in B(q)$ for some $p \neq q$. Of course, $p < q$ and so at least the whole outer gap $OG(q - 1)$ lies between x_s and x_{s+t} . Suppose on the contrary that there is $m < 0$ such that also $x_{s+m}, x_{s+t+m} \in U^1(a_0)$. This in particular means that $s + m \geq 0$. Let $q_- > 0$ be the iterative distance of x_{s+t} from its left neighbour in $U^1(a_0)$, i.e. the least positive integer such that $x_{s+t-q_-} \in U^1(a_0)$. By (L4) (no matter whether x_{s+t} is the first point of $B(q)$ or not) and (L3) we know that, respectively,

$$q_- > og(q - 1) \quad \text{and} \quad og(q - 1) > s .$$

Since $x_{s+t+m} \in U^1(a_0)$, by the definition of q_- we then have $|m| = -m \geq q_- > og(q - 1) > s$. Hence $s + m < 0$, a contradiction. \square

Lemma 5.3. *Let $s \geq 0$, $t > 0$ and $x_s, x_{s+t} \in U^1(a_0) \cap \tilde{P}(k, l)$. Then there is no $m < 0$ such that $x_{s+m} \in U^1(a_0) \cap \bigcup_{i=1}^{k-1} B(i)$ and $x_{s+t+m} \in U^1(a_0) \cap P(k, 1)$.*

Proof. Let $k \geq 2$, otherwise there is nothing to prove. Suppose, on the contrary, that there is $m < 0$ with that property (hence $s + m \geq 0$). We have, as in (5.6),

$$P(k, l) = x_{j(l)}, x_{j(l)+1}, \dots, x_{j(l)+n_1^k}, \dots, x_{j(l)+n_2^k}, \dots, x_{j(l)+n_k^k},$$

where the set $E(k, l) = \{x_{j(l)}, x_{j(l)+n_1^k}, \dots, x_{j(l)+n_k^k}\}$ is the set of the *endpoints of the winds* in $P(k, l)$. Similarly,

$$P(k, 1) = x_{j(1)}, x_{j(1)+1}, \dots, x_{j(1)+n_1^k}, \dots, x_{j(1)+n_2^k}, \dots, x_{j(1)+n_k^k},$$

where $E(k, 1) = \{x_{j(1)}, x_{j(1)+n_1^k}, \dots, x_{j(1)+n_k^k}\}$ is the set of the endpoints of the winds in $P(k, 1)$.

Since $x_s, x_{s+t} \in U^1(a_0) \cap \tilde{P}(k, l)$, by Lemma 5.1(1) we know that they almost coincide with the p -th and the q -th elements in $E(k, l)$, for some $p < q$ (recall that by saying that two points almost coincide we mean that their iterative distance is at most one). The left shift from x_s, x_{s+t} to x_{s+m}, x_{s+t+m} can be performed as the composition of two shorter left shifts. First, we shift x_s, x_{s+t} to points $x_{s+\sigma}, x_{s+t+\sigma}$ which almost coincide with the p -th and the q -th elements in $E(k, 1)$ (this is possible because the lengths of winds in $P(k, l)$ are the same as in $P(k, 1)$). Then the point $x_{s+\sigma}$ is either in $P(k, 1)$ or it is the last point of $OG(k-1)$. So we need to shift $x_{s+\sigma}, x_{s+t+\sigma}$ still to the left, now finally to x_{s+m}, x_{s+t+m} . Since $OG(k-1)$ does not contain points from $U^1(a_0)$, this shift has to be at least as long as it is the length of $OG(k-1)$, which is much larger than 1. Since x_{s+t+m} has to be in $U^1(a_0)$ and to the left of $x_{s+t+\sigma}$, this second shift (whose length is much larger than 1) is of course at least as long as the iterative distance between $(q-1)$ -st and q -th elements in $E(k, 1)$ (see Lemma 5.1(1)), meant in approximative sense, i.e. an error, now definitely not greater than 2, is possible when we claim this. This iterative distance is, by (L4), much larger than $|\text{pre}(W)|$ where W is the wind whose endpoints are the $(q-1)$ -st and q -th elements in $E(k, 1)$. Since $x_{s+\sigma}$ almost coincides with the p -th element of $E(k, 1)$ and $p \leq q-1$, we get that $s+m < 0$, a contradiction. \square

Lemma 5.4. *Let $s \geq 0, t > 0$ and let the points $x_s, x_{s+t} \in U^1(a_0)$ be $U^1(a_0)$ -shiftable, i.e. there exists an $m \neq 0$ such that also $x_{s+m} \in U^1(a_0)$ and $x_{s+t+m} \in U^1(a_0)$. Then the following is true.*

- (1) *If $x_s, x_{s+t} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_1)$ for some k and i_1 , then $x_{s+m}, x_{s+t+m} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_2)$ for some $i_2 \neq i_1$.*
- (2) *If $x_s \in \tilde{P}(k, i_1), x_{s+t} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_2)$ for some k and $i_1 < i_2$, then $x_{s+m} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_1), x_{s+t+m} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_2)$.*
- (3) *The points $x_s, x_{s+t}, x_{s+m}, x_{s+t+m}$ belong to the same block $B(k)$, for some k .*
- (4) *If $x_s, x_{s+t} \in \tilde{P}(k, i)$ for some k and i , then x_s, x_{s+m} are in the “similar positions”, meaning that if we write, as in (5.17), the point x_s in the form*

$$x_s = x_{r+n_c^k - s_i(c)} \in \tilde{P}(k, i) \quad \text{for some } 0 \leq c \leq k,$$

then there exists i' such that

$$x_{s+m} = x_{r'+n_c^k - s_{i'}(c)} \in \tilde{P}(k, i') \quad \text{with the same } 0 \leq c \leq k.$$

Here $r, r' \geq 0$ are such that $x_r = y_{(k,i),0}, x_{r'} = y_{(k,i'),0}$ are the first points of the pieces $P(k, i), P(k, i')$, respectively, and $s_i, s_{i'} \in F(k)$ are the functions corresponding to the pieces $P(k, i), P(k, i')$, respectively.

- (5) *If $x_s \in \tilde{P}(k, i_1)$ and $x_{s+t} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_2)$ for some k and $i_1 < i_2$, then x_s, x_{s+t} are in the “similar positions”.*

Proof. By (5.15) and (5.14), the points from $U^1(a_0)$ belong to $\bigcup_{k=1}^{\infty} B(k)$. Moreover, since they belong to the union of all parts, Lemma 5.1(1) shows their location more precisely. Namely, each of them almost coincides with an endpoint of a wind.

(1) Since $x_s, x_{s+t} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_1)$, we have $t < |\tilde{P}(k, i_1)|$. On the other hand, by combining (L2) and (L4), each inner gap in $B(k)$ is much longer than $|\tilde{P}(k, i_1)|$, hence much longer than t . Therefore

$$x_{s+m}, x_{s+t+m} \quad \text{cannot lie in different parts of } B(k). \quad (5.18)$$

Further, we claim that, for $m \neq 0$,

$$x_{s+m}, x_{s+t+m} \quad \text{cannot both lie in } \tilde{P}(k, i_1). \quad (5.19)$$

This is because by Lemma 5.1(2), different pairs of point in $\tilde{P}(k, i_1) \cap U^1(a_0)$ have different iterative distances.

By (L2-4), all (inner and outer) gaps which are to the right of x_{s+t} are much longer than t . So, if $m > 0$ then the points x_{s+m}, x_{s+t+m} cannot be separated by such a gap, i.e. they are in the same part. This cannot be a part to the right of $B(k)$ because, by (L4), every wind in such a part is much longer than t and so the iterative distance of x_{s+m}, x_{s+t+m} would be longer than t , a contradiction. We conclude that

$$\text{if } m > 0 \text{ then } x_{s+m}, x_{s+t+m} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_2) \text{ for some } i_1 < i_2 \quad (5.20)$$

(we have excluded the equality $i_1 = i_2$ by (5.19)).

Now let $m < 0$. Since $x_s, x_{s+t} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_1)$, t is at least as large as the length of the shortest wind in $P(k, i_1)$. Hence, by (L4), $t \gg |\text{pre}(B(k))|$. Therefore, since the iterative distance between x_{s+m} and x_{s+t+m} is t , the point x_{s+t+m} cannot be in $\text{pre}(B(k))$. Using this fact as well as (5.18) and (5.19), we get two cases:

- (i) $x_{s+m} \in \bigcup_{i=1}^{k-1} B(i)$ and $x_{s+t+m} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_2)$ for some $i_2 \leq i_1$, or
- (ii) $x_{s+m}, x_{s+t+m} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_2)$ for some $i_2 < i_1$.

In the case (i) we have $i_2 = 1$, otherwise the inner gap $IG(k, 1)$ is between x_{s+m} and x_{s+t+m} and so the iterative distance of these two points is $t > ig(k, 1)$. However, this contradicts the facts that, by (L2), $ig(k, 1)$ is much larger than $|P(k, 1)| = |P(k, i_1)|$ and $\tilde{P}(k, i_1)$ contains x_s and x_{s+t} . So, (i) can be replaced by (note that $\tilde{P}(k, 1) = P(k, 1)$)

$$(i') \quad x_{s+m} \in \bigcup_{i=1}^{k-1} B(i) \text{ and } x_{s+t+m} \in P(k, 1).$$

However, (i') is excluded by Lemma 5.3. So, only the case (ii) is possible and then we are done, just combine it with (5.20).

(2) The inner gap $IG(k, i_2 - 1)$ lies between x_s and x_{s+t} (with possible exception of the last point of $IG(k, i_2 - 1)$ which may belong to $\tilde{P}(k, i_2)$ and to be equal to x_{s+t}). Hence $t \geq ig(k, i_2 - 1)$ and so, by (L2),

$$t \gg |P(k, i_1)| = |P(k, l)|, \quad l = 1, 2, \dots, 2^{k+1} \quad (5.21)$$

(all the pieces in a block have the same length).

We claim that

$$x_{s+t+m} \text{ cannot be to the left of } \tilde{P}(k, i_2). \quad (5.22)$$

Indeed, x_{s+t+m} cannot be in $IG(k, i_2 - 1) \setminus \tilde{P}(k, i_2)$, because this set is disjoint with $U^1(a_0)$. Also, x_{s+t+m} cannot be to the left of $IG(k, i_2 - 1)$, otherwise $|m| \geq ig(k, i_2 - 1)$ and since $ig(k, i_2 - 1) \gg |\text{pre}(IG(k, i_2 - 1))|$ and $x_s \in \text{pre}(IG(k, i_2 - 1))$, we would get $|m| \gg s$ whence $s + m < 0$, a contradiction.

Further, we claim that

$$x_{s+t+m} \text{ cannot be to the right of } \tilde{P}(k, i_2). \quad (5.23)$$

We prove this. First suppose that $x_{s+t+m} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_3)$ for some $i_3 > i_2$. By (5.21), $x_{s+m} \notin \tilde{P}(k, i_3)$. Then $t = (s + t + m) - (s + m) > ig(k, i_3 - 1)$. On the other hand, since $x_s \in \tilde{P}(k, i_1)$ and $x_{s+t} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_2)$, (L2) gives $t \ll ig(k, i_3 - 1)$, a contradiction.

Now suppose that $x_{s+t+m} \in B(L)$ for some $L > k$. If also $x_{s+m} \in B(L)$ then, since $x_{s+t+m}, x_{s+m} \in U^1(a_0)$, t is at least as long as the first wind in $B(L)$. By (L4), and using that $x_s, x_{s+t} \in \text{pre}(B(L))$, we get $t \gg |\text{pre}(B(L))| \geq t$, a contradiction. So assume that $x_{s+m} \notin B(L)$, i.e. $x_{s+m} \in \text{pre}(B(L))$. Since $OG(L - 1)$ is disjoint with $U^1(a_0)$, the whole gap $OG(L - 1)$ is between x_{s+m} and x_{s+t+m} . Hence, using also (L3) and the fact that $x_s, x_{s+t} \in \text{pre}(OG(L - 1))$, we get $t > OG(L - 1) \gg \text{pre}(OG(L - 1)) \geq t$, again a contradiction. We have proved (5.23).

By (5.22) and (5.23), $x_{s+t+m} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_2)$. Since both x_{s+t} and x_{s+t+m} belong to the same part $\tilde{P}(k, i_2)$, by the already proved claim (1) we get that their shifts by $-t$, i.e. the points x_s and x_{s+m} , belong to the same part $\tilde{P}(k, l)$, for some $l \neq i_2$. However, $x_s \in \tilde{P}(k, i_1)$ by the assumption, therefore $l = i_1$ and we are done.

(3) First we prove that the points x_s, x_{s+t} are in the same block.

Suppose, on the contrary, that there are $p < q$ such that $x_s \in B(p)$ and $x_{s+t} \in B(q)$. In view of Lemma 5.2, these two $U^1(a_0)$ -shiftable points are $U^1(a_0)$ -right shiftable. So, there is $m > 0$ such that also $x_{s+m}, x_{s+t+m} \in U_1(a_0)$. Hence, also these two points belong to the union of blocks. We see that they are

$U^1(a_0)$ -left shiftable (shift by $-m$ sends them to x_s and x_{s+t}). So, by Lemma 5.2, x_{s+m} and x_{s+t+m} belong to the same block $B(r)$ for some $q \leq r$.

Suppose that $q < r$. Then x_{s+m} and x_{s+t+m} , being two elements of $U^1(a_0)$ in the block $B(r)$, have their iterative distance t at least as large as the length of the first wind of the first piece in $B(r)$ (see (L4)). However, by (L4), this length is larger than the length of $\text{pre}(B(r))$. In particular, t is larger than the iterative distance between $x_s, x_{s+t} \in \text{pre}(B(r))$, a contradiction.

So, $q = r$. We have four points in $U^1(a_0)$, namely $x_s \in B(p)$, $x_{s+t}, x_{s+m}, x_{s+t+m} \in B(q)$, where $p < q$. Since $x_{s+m}, x_{s+t+m} \in B(q)$, then either

$$x_{s+m}, x_{s+t+m} \in \tilde{P}(q, i)$$

for some $i \in \mathbb{N}$ or

$$x_{s+m} \in \tilde{P}(q, i_1) \quad \text{and} \quad x_{s+t+m} \in \tilde{P}(q, i_2)$$

for some $i_1 < i_2 \in \mathbb{N}$. Then, by applying either (1) or (2) to the points x_{s+m} and x_{s+t+m} and the shift by $-m$, we get that

$$x_s = x_{(s+m)-m} \in B_q$$

and this contradicts the assumption that $x_s \in B(p)$.

So, we already know that x_s, x_{s+t} are in the same block $B(k)$. They are either in the same part or in different parts of this block. In either case, by (1) or (2), the other two points x_{s+m} and x_{s+t+m} are also in that block $B(k)$. The proof is finished.

(4) By (1), $x_{s+m} \in \tilde{P}(k, i')$ for some i' . Denote the first points of the pieces $P(k, i)$ and $P(k, i')$ by $x_r = y_{(k,i),0}$ and $x_{r'} = y_{(k,i'),0}$, respectively. Since $x_s \in \tilde{P}(k, i) \cap U^1(a_0)$ and $x_{s+m} \in \tilde{P}(k, i') \cap U^1(a_0)$, we can write, as in (5.17),

$$x_s = x_{r+n_c^k - s_i(c)}, \quad \text{for some } 0 \leq c \leq k$$

and

$$x_{s+m} = x_{r'+n_d^k - s_i(d)}, \quad \text{for some } 0 \leq d \leq k.$$

We need to show that $d = c$. Using that $x_{s+t} \in \tilde{P}(k, i)$ and, by (1), $x_{s+t+m} \in \tilde{P}(k, i')$, we also have

$$x_{s+t} = x_{r+n_\gamma^k - s_{i'}(\gamma)}, \quad \text{for some } 0 \leq c < \gamma \leq k$$

and

$$x_{s+t+m} = x_{r'+n_\delta^k - s_{i'}(\delta)}, \quad \text{for some } 0 \leq d < \delta \leq k.$$

So, since $t = (s+t) - s = (s+t+m) - (s+m)$, we get

$$t = n_\gamma^k - n_c^k - (s_i(\gamma) - s_i(c)) = n_\delta^k - n_d^k - (s_{i'}(\delta) - s_{i'}(d)).$$

Recall that $n_\gamma^k - n_c^k$ and $n_\delta^k - n_d^k$ are much larger than $s_i(\gamma) - s_i(c)$ and $s_{i'}(\delta) - s_{i'}(d)$. Also, by (L4), in the finite sequence $n_0^k, n_1^k, \dots, n_k^k$ we have $n_{j+1}^k \gg n_j^k$. It follows that $c = d$ and $\gamma = \delta$.

(5) By (2), we have $x_{s+m} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_1)$ and $x_{s+t+m} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_2)$. Then

$$x_s, x_{s+m} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_1) \quad \text{and} \quad x_{s+t}, x_{s+t+m} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_2).$$

Then by (4), x_s, x_{s+t} are in the ‘‘similar positions’’. \square

We are finally able to prove the main result of this section. As already said, it is sufficient to prove (R1) and (R2) from the beginning of this section.

Theorem 5.5. *The system (X_1, T) has the following properties.*

- (1) (a_0, a_1) is an IN-pair.
- (2) (a_0, a_j) is not an IN-pair for any $|j| \geq 2$.
- (3) (a_0, a_∞) is not an IN-pair.

Hence $h^*(T) = \log 2$.

Proof. (1) This is by the construction. As already said above, see e.g. (5.7), the set $N(k)$ from (5.8) is an independence set of times of length $k + 1$ for $(U^k(a_0), U^k(a_1))$. Hence (1).

(2) It is sufficient to show that (a_0, a_j) is not an IN-pair whenever $j \geq 2$ because then, for $j \geq 2$, neither (a_0, a_{-j}) is an IN-pair. Indeed, if for some $j \geq 2$ the pair (a_0, a_{-j}) were an IN-pair, then by Proposition 2.6(a) also (a_0, a_j) would be an IN-pair.

Fix $j \geq 2$ and suppose, on the contrary, that (a_0, a_j) is an IN-pair. It follows that $(U^1(a_0), U^1(a_j))$ has an independence set of times of length 5, i.e. there are pairwise distinct positive integers $l_{-1} < l_0 < l_1 < l_2 < l_3$ such that $\{l_{-1}, l_0, l_1, l_2, l_3\}$ is an independence set of times for $(U^1(a_0), U^1(a_j))$. Then, in particular, there exist pairwise distinct $m_1, m_2, m_3, m_4 \in \mathbb{N}$ such that (notice that in the underlined inclusions we have a_j rather than a_0)

$$x_{m_1+l_{-1}} \in U^1(a_0), x_{m_1+l_0} \in U^1(a_0), x_{m_1+l_1} \in U^1(a_0), x_{m_1+l_2} \in U^1(a_0), x_{m_1+l_3} \in U^1(a_0), \quad (5.24)$$

$$x_{m_2+l_{-1}} \in U^1(a_0), x_{m_2+l_0} \in U^1(a_0), x_{m_2+l_1} \in U^1(a_0), \underline{x_{m_2+l_2} \in U^1(a_j)}, x_{m_2+l_3} \in U^1(a_0), \quad (5.25)$$

$$x_{m_3+l_{-1}} \in U^1(a_0), x_{m_3+l_0} \in U^1(a_0), \underline{x_{m_3+l_1} \in U^1(a_j)}, x_{m_3+l_2} \in U^1(a_0), x_{m_3+l_3} \in U^1(a_0), \quad (5.26)$$

$$x_{m_4+l_{-1}} \in U^1(a_0), \underline{x_{m_4+l_0} \in U^1(a_j)}, x_{m_4+l_1} \in U^1(a_0), x_{m_4+l_2} \in U^1(a_0), x_{m_4+l_3} \in U^1(a_0). \quad (5.27)$$

Look at the eight points in the first and last columns. If we now take a pair (made of them) lying in one row, then it is $U^1(a_0)$ -shifttable to a pair (made of them) lying in any other row. Then, by Lemma 5.4(3), there exists $k \in \mathbb{N}$ such that these eight points lie in $B(k)$. Hence, since $l_{-1} < l_0 < l_1 < l_2 < l_3$, in each row the five points are in the same block (i.e., in that block $B(k)$). So,

$$\{x_{m_i+l_j} : 1 \leq i \leq 4, -1 \leq j \leq 3\} \subseteq B(k).$$

From now on we are interested in the nine points in the following smaller 3×3 table:

$$x_{m_1+l_1} \in U^1(a_0), x_{m_1+l_2} \in U^1(a_0), x_{m_1+l_3} \in U^1(a_0),$$

$$x_{m_2+l_1} \in U^1(a_0), \underline{x_{m_2+l_2} \in U^1(a_j)}, x_{m_2+l_3} \in U^1(a_0),$$

$$\underline{x_{m_3+l_1} \in U^1(a_j)}, x_{m_3+l_2} \in U^1(a_0), x_{m_3+l_3} \in U^1(a_0).$$

We show that if two points in the first row of this smaller table are in the same part $\tilde{P}(k, i_1)$ then all the three points in this row are in $\tilde{P}(k, i_1)$. Suppose that this is not the case. To get a contradiction, we will use only these three points and the last three points in (5.27). All these six points are in $U^1(a_0)$. Therefore, due to this symmetry, we can assume that for instance $x_{m_1+l_1}, x_{m_1+l_2} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_1)$ and $x_{m_1+l_3} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_2)$ with $i_1 \neq i_2$. Since $x_{m_1+l_1}, x_{m_1+l_3}$ are $U^1(a_0)$ -shifttable to $x_{m_4+l_1}, x_{m_4+l_3}$, by Lemma 5.4(2) we get $x_{m_4+l_1} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_1)$. Also, $x_{m_1+l_1}, x_{m_1+l_2}$ are $U^1(a_0)$ -shifttable to $x_{m_4+l_1}, x_{m_4+l_2}$ and so, by Lemma 5.4(1) we get $x_{m_4+l_1} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_3)$ with $i_3 \neq i_1$, a contradiction.

Therefore we have two cases: either all three points in the first row are in the same part, or they are in three different parts.

Case 1: $x_{m_1+l_1}, x_{m_1+l_2}, x_{m_1+l_3} \in \tilde{P}(k, i)$ for some i .

In this case, by Lemma 5.4(1), we have

$$x_{m_1+l_1}, x_{m_1+l_2}, x_{m_1+l_3} \in \tilde{P}(k, i) \quad (5.28)$$

$$x_{m_2+l_1}, x_{m_2+l_3} \in \tilde{P}(k, i') \quad (5.29)$$

$$x_{m_3+l_2}, x_{m_3+l_3} \in \tilde{P}(k, i'') \quad (5.30)$$

where i, i', i'' are pairwise different (note that all these seven points are in $U^1(a_0)$). According to Lemma 5.4(4), $T^{m_2+l_1}x_0$ and $T^{m_1+l_1}x_0$ are in the ‘‘similar positions’’, i.e.

$$x_{m_1+l_1} = x_{r+n_d^k-s_i(d)} \quad \text{and} \quad x_{m_2+l_1} = x_{r'+n_d^k-s_{i'}(d)}$$

for some $0 \leq d \leq k$ (here x_r and $x_{r'}$ are the first points of the pieces $P(k, i)$ and $P(k, i')$, and s_i and $s_{i'}$ are the corresponding functions in $F(k)$). Further, since $x_{m_1+l_2} \in \tilde{P}(k, i)$, we have

$$x_{m_1+l_2} = x_{r+n_c^k-s_i(c)} \quad (5.31)$$

for some $0 \leq c \leq k$ (here $d < c$ and so $n_d^k < n_c^k$, because $m_1 + l_1 < m_1 + l_2$, but we do not use this property). Then

$$l_2 - l_1 = m_1 + l_2 - (m_1 + l_1) = n_c^k - n_d^k - (s_i(c) - s_i(d)).$$

We are interested in the point $x_{m_2+l_2}$, so let us compute

$$\begin{aligned} m_2 + l_2 &= m_2 + l_1 + (l_2 - l_1) = r' + n_d^k - s_{i'}(d) + (l_2 - l_1) \\ &= r' + n_c^k - s_{i'}(d) - (s_i(c) - s_i(d)) \\ &= r' + n_c^k - s_{i'}(c) + (s_{i'}(c) - s_{i'}(d)) - (s_i(c) - s_i(d)) \\ &\in \{r' + n_c^k - s_{i'}(c) + t : -2 \leq t \leq 2\}. \end{aligned} \tag{5.32}$$

Note that $x_{r'+n_c^k} \in U^1(a_{s_{i'}(c)})$, whence $x_{r'+n_c^k-s_{i'}(c)} \in U^1(a_0)$. Therefore

$$x_{m_2+l_2} \in U^1(a_{-2}) \cup U^1(a_{-1}) \cup U^1(a_0) \cup U^1(a_1) \cup U^1(a_2). \tag{5.33}$$

On the other hand, by (5.25), $x_{m_2+l_2} \in U^1(a_j)$. So, when $j \geq 3$, we have a contradiction.

If $j = 2$, $x_{m_2+l_2} \in U^1(a_j)$ is specified as $x_{m_2+l_2} \in U^1(a_2)$. Then, using (5.32) and the fact that $x_{r'+n_c^k-s_{i'}(c)} \in U^1(a_0)$, we get $(s_{i'}(c) - s_{i'}(d)) - (s_i(c) - s_i(d)) = 2$ and thus

$$l_2 - l_1 = n_c^k - n_d^k - (s_i(c) - s_i(d)) = n_c^k - n_d^k + 1. \tag{5.34}$$

Let r'' be the first point of $P(k, i'')$ and let $s_{i''}$ be the function from $F(k)$ which corresponds to $P(k, i'')$. Then

$$x_{r''+n_u^k-s_{i''}(u)} \in U^1(a_0) \quad \text{for } 0 \leq u \leq k.$$

Recall that, by (5.24) and (5.26),

$$x_{m_1+l_2}, x_{m_1+l_3} \in U^1(a_0) \quad \text{and} \quad x_{m_3+l_2}, x_{m_3+l_3} \in U^1(a_0).$$

Therefore, by Lemma 5.4(4), $x_{m_1+l_2}$ and $x_{m_3+l_2}$ are in the ‘‘similar positions’’. In view of (5.31), $x_{m_3+l_2} = x_{r''+n_c^k-s_{i''}(c)}$. Using this and (5.34) and taking into account that the values of $s_{i''}$ are just 0 and 1, we have

$$\begin{aligned} m_3 + l_1 &= m_3 + l_2 - (l_2 - l_1) \\ &= r'' + n_c^k - s_{i''}(c) - (n_c^k - n_d^k + 1) \\ &= r'' + n_d^k - s_{i''}(d) + (s_{i''}(d) - s_{i''}(c)) - 1 \\ &\in \{r'' + n_d^k - s_{i''}(d) + t : -2 \leq t \leq 0\}. \end{aligned}$$

This implies that

$$x_{m_3+l_1} \in U^1(a_{-2}) \cup U^1(a_{-1}) \cup U^1(a_0),$$

which contradicts that, by (5.26), $x_{m_3+l_1} \in U^1(a_2)$.

Case 2: $x_{m_1+l_t} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_t)$, $t = 1, 2, 3$, for pairwise different i_1, i_2, i_3 .

In this case, using Lemma 5.4(2), we have

$$x_{l_1+m_1}, x_{l_1+m_2} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_1) \tag{5.35}$$

$$x_{l_2+m_1}, x_{l_2+m_3} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_2) \tag{5.36}$$

$$x_{l_3+m_1}, x_{l_3+m_2}, x_{l_3+m_3} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_3) \tag{5.37}$$

We have received a system of inclusions very similar to that from Case 1, see (5.28)-(5.30). Recall that in Case 1 we have obtained a contradiction by considering two $U^1(a_0)$ -shifts. Namely, we shifted $x_{m_1+l_1}, x_{m_1+l_3}$ to $x_{m_2+l_1}, x_{m_2+l_3}$, and $x_{m_1+l_2}, x_{m_1+l_3}$ to $x_{m_3+l_2}, x_{m_3+l_3}$. Then we were looking for the possible positions of the points $x_{m_2+l_2}$ and $x_{m_3+l_1}$ (i.e. the points missing in (5.28)-(5.30)). This led to contradictions. To finish the proof in Case 2, it is sufficient to proceed analogously as in Case 1, but now we consider the following $U^1(a_0)$ -shifts: the shift of $x_{l_3+m_1}, x_{l_3+m_3}$ to $x_{l_2+m_1}, x_{l_2+m_3}$ and then the shift of $x_{l_3+m_1}, x_{l_3+m_2}$ to $x_{l_1+m_1}, x_{l_1+m_2}$. Then contradictions will be obtained by looking for positions of the points $x_{m_2+l_2}$ and $x_{m_3+l_1}$. We leave the details to the reader.

(3) The proof is completely analogous to that of (ii). Replacing always $U^1(a_j)$ by $U^1(a_\infty)$, but otherwise repeating the proof word by word, one again gets (see (5.33))

$$x_{m_2+l_2} \in U^1(a_{-2}) \cup U^1(a_{-1}) \cup U^1(a_0) \cup U^1(a_1) \cup U^1(a_2)$$

and simultaneously $x_{m_2+l_2} \in U^1(a_\infty)$. In view of (5.1), this already immediately gives a contradiction and finishes the proof of Case 1, so the proof is even easier than in (2). Analogously in Case 2. \square

Remark 5.6. Theorem 5.5 gives a space X_1 with $S(X_1) \supseteq \{0, \log 2\}$. Since X_1 is a zero-dimensional space with infinite derived set, we in fact have $S(X_1) = \log \mathbb{N}^*$, see Table 2.

6. A CONTINUUM X WITH $S(X) = \{0, \log 2\}$

In this section, we will construct a continuum X with $S(X) = \{0, \log 2\}$. The main idea of the construction is similar to that of the construction of a continuum X with $S(X) = \{0, \infty\}$ in Section 4. However, now the construction is more subtle and the technical details are more complicated.

6.1. Outline of the construction of X . We start with the space $X_1 \subseteq \mathbb{R}^3$ defined in Section 5. So,

$$X_1 = A \sqcup \{x_0, x_1, \dots\} \tag{6.1}$$

with the set $A = \{a_i : i \in \mathbb{Z}\} \cup \{a_\infty\}$ lying in the circle \mathbb{S}^1 in the vertical plane π_0 and $\{x_0, x_1, \dots\} \subseteq (0, 1] \times A$. Recall that we have also constructed a continuous map

$$T : X_1 \rightarrow X_1 \quad \text{with} \quad h^*(T) = \log 2. \tag{6.2}$$

We use the same tools as in Section 4. For terminology, the reader is referred to that section.

While the head in Section 4 (i.e. in the case $S(X) = \{0, \infty\}$) was just one planar Cook continuum \mathcal{K}_0 , now (i.e. in the case $S(X) = \{0, \log 2\}$) the head is more complicated. We denote it by \mathcal{A}_0 and we construct it by joining the consecutive points of A by some Cook continua as follows.

We may assume that a_0 or a_∞ is the north or south pole of \mathbb{S}^1 , respectively, and that the points a_k and a_{-k} are symmetric with respect to the vertical diameter of \mathbb{S}^1 , see Figure 5.1. By the arc $\widehat{a_k a_{k+1}}$ of the circle \mathbb{S}^1 we mean that arc of the circle, which has endpoints a_k and a_{k+1} and does not contain any other point of A . Let the lengths of these circle arcs be decreasing for $k = 0, 1, 2, \dots$ and, due to symmetry, also for $k = -1, -2, \dots$. Thus, $\widehat{a_0 a_1}$ and $\widehat{a_{-1} a_0}$ are the longest of them. We may also assume that the set A is such that the lengths of these arcs are not longer than $1/4$ of the length of the circle \mathbb{S}^1 . Then the angle between consecutive chords, i.e. between straight line segments $a_i a_{i+1}$ and $a_{i+1} a_{i+2}$, is not smaller than $\pi/2$. For $k \in \mathbb{Z}$, let \mathcal{S}_k be the sector of the plane obtained as the union of all rays starting at the center of the circle \mathbb{S}^1 and going through the points of the circle arc $\widehat{a_k a_{k+1}}$, see Figure 6.1.

We choose a (so called ‘big’) rhombus $BR_0 \subseteq \mathcal{S}_0 \subseteq \pi_0$ such that the straight line segment $a_0 a_1$ is one of its diagonal, the other diagonal being shorter.¹⁶ Then the angles of this big rhombus at the vertices a_0 and a_1 are smaller than $\pi/2$. Note that the only points of BR_0 lying in the boundary of the sector \mathcal{S}_0 are a_0 and a_1 .

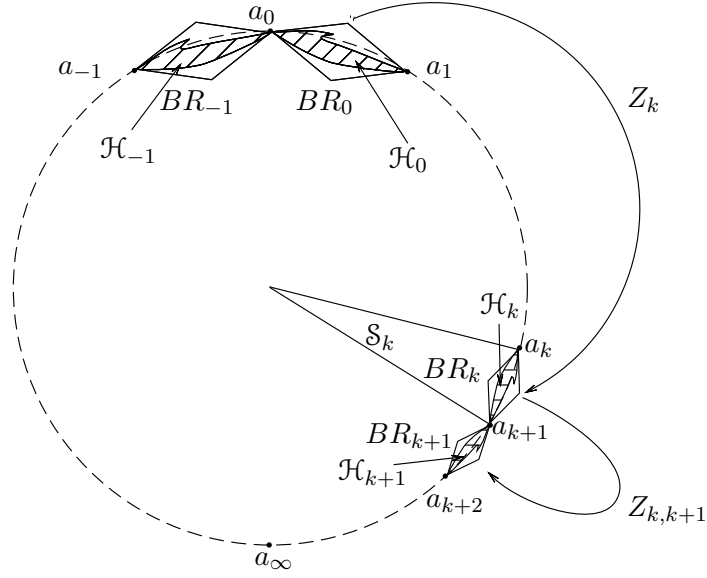
Let $\mathcal{H}_0 \subseteq BR_0$ be a Cook continuum (which is not homeomorphic to any of the Cook continua used below as bricks in the snake) containing the points a_0 and a_1 and containing no other points in the boundary of BR_0 . The points a_0 and a_1 will be called the *extremal points* of \mathcal{H}_0 , namely the *first point* and the *last point* of \mathcal{H}_0 , respectively. So,

$$\mathcal{H}_0 \subseteq BR_0 \quad \text{with all non-extremal points in } \text{Int } BR_0 \tag{6.3}$$

and the distance between extremal points of \mathcal{H}_0 equals the diameter of \mathcal{H}_0 (and this equals the diameter of BR_0).

For every integer k , let Z_k be the direct similitude (similarity transformation) defined in the plane π_0 , i.e. the composition of a homothety and a direct euclidean motion, which maps the straight line segment $a_0 a_1$ onto the straight line segment $a_k a_{k+1}$, with $Z_k(a_0) = a_k$, $Z_k(a_1) = a_{k+1}$ (in particular, Z_0 is the identity). Then the big rhombus BR_0 containing a_0, a_1 is mapped by Z_k onto some rhombus, again call

¹⁶The strange notation BR means a ‘big rhombus’, in contrast with ‘small rhombuses’ which will appear later. The small rhombuses will be subsets of big rhombuses and the notation SR (with some indices) will be used for them.

FIGURE 6.1. Big rhombuses and maps Z_k

it a big rhombus, BR_k containing a_k, a_{k+1} and the Cook continuum $\mathcal{H}_0 \subseteq BR_0$ is mapped by Z_k onto a (homeomorphic) Cook continuum $\mathcal{H}_k \subseteq BR_k$. So,

$$BR_k := Z_k(BR_0) \quad \text{and} \quad \mathcal{H}_k := Z_k(\mathcal{H}_0). \quad (6.4)$$

The points a_k and a_{k+1} are said to be the extremal points, or, more precisely, the first point and the last point, respectively, of both BR_k and \mathcal{H}_k . Due to (6.3),

$$\mathcal{H}_k \subseteq BR_k \text{ with all non-extremal points in } \text{Int } BR_k. \quad (6.5)$$

So, all the continua \mathcal{H}_k are copies of \mathcal{H}_0 , obtained from it by just ‘zooming and moving’ it. Recall that the angle between two consecutive chords $a_i a_{i+1}$ and $a_{i+1} a_{i+2}$ is at least $\pi/2$, while the vertex angles of our big rhombuses at those vertices which belong to the set A are smaller than $\pi/2$ (for BR_0 this is by construction and note that the similitudes preserve angles). Hence the big rhombuses BR_k , $k \in \mathbb{Z}$, are pairwise disjoint, except that $BR_k \cap BR_{k+1} = \{a_{k+1}\}$, $k \in \mathbb{Z}$. The same is true for the Cook continua \mathcal{H}_k , $k \in \mathbb{Z}$.

Clearly, Z_0 is an isometry and since the arcs $\widehat{a_0 a_1}$ and $\widehat{a_{-1} a_0}$ have the same lengths, also Z_{-1} is an isometry. However,

$$\text{for } k \neq 0, -1, \text{ the similitudes } Z_k \text{ decrease distances.} \quad (6.6)$$

Note also that, given $i, j \in \mathbb{Z}$, for the homeomorphism (in fact a similitude defined in the whole plane π_0)

$$Z_{i,j} = Z_j \circ (Z_i)^{-1} \quad (6.7)$$

we have $Z_{i,j}(a_i) = a_j$, $Z_{i,j}(a_{i+1}) = a_{j+1}$ and

$$BR_j = Z_{i,j}(BR_i) \quad \text{and} \quad \mathcal{H}_j = Z_{i,j}(\mathcal{H}_i), \quad (6.8)$$

see Figure 6.1.

The *head* of our space X will then be the set

$$\mathcal{A}_0 = A \cup \bigcup_{i \in \mathbb{Z}} \mathcal{H}_i = \{a_{\infty}\} \cup \bigcup_{i \in \mathbb{Z}} Z_i(\mathcal{H}_0) \subseteq \pi_0 \quad (6.9)$$

which looks like a necklace of infinitely many copies of the Cook continuum \mathcal{H}_0 , together with the point a_{∞} . Clearly, it is a continuum in the vertical plane π_0 .

In Section 4 (i.e. in the case $S(X) = \{0, \infty\}$) we had planar Cook continua \mathcal{K}_i^m , called bricks, and the sets D_1^*, D_2^*, \dots made of the bricks, which were used to join the points of the trajectory x_1, x_2, \dots . The union of

all sets D_i^* was the snake of X . Now (i.e. in the case $S(X) = \{0, \log 2\}$) the snake is defined similarly as in Section 4 (and, as before, X is the union of the head and the snake) with only two differences.

- First, a small technical difference is that now we start with the trajectory x_0, x_1, \dots , rather than x_1, x_2, \dots , therefore we ‘shift’ the indices in the notations of the bricks and the sets D_m . Now a continuum joining x_m and x_{m+1} will be in fact denoted by $D(m)$, $m = 0, 1, \dots$. So,

$$D(m) = \bigcup_{i=1}^{\infty} \mathcal{K}_i^m \cup \{x_{m+1}\} \quad \text{and} \quad D^*(m) = \bigcup_{i=1}^{\infty} \mathcal{K}_i^m = D_m \setminus \{x_{m+1}\}, \quad (6.10)$$

and

$$\begin{aligned} D^*(0) &= \text{copy of } \mathcal{K}_1 \cup \text{copy of } \mathcal{K}_2 \cup \dots, \\ D^*(1) &= \text{copy of } \mathcal{K}_2 \cup \text{copy of } \mathcal{K}_4 \cup \dots, \\ D^*(2) &= \text{copy of } \mathcal{K}_4 \cup \text{copy of } \mathcal{K}_8 \cup \dots, \\ &\dots \end{aligned} \quad (6.11)$$

Recall that $\{\mathcal{K}_1, \mathcal{K}_2, \dots\}$ is a family of planar non-homeomorphic Cook continua, which are also non-homeomorphic to Cook continua \mathcal{H}_k used in the head. In the usual sense we speak on the extremal points, i.e. on the first point and the last point, of the copies of \mathcal{K}_i used to build the snake. As in Subsection 4.2, in every \mathcal{K}_i we choose two points whose distance equals the diameter of \mathcal{K}_i and we call them the *extremal points* of \mathcal{K}_i , or the *first point* and the *last point* of \mathcal{K}_i . When considering a homeomorphic copy of \mathcal{K}_i , the images of these two points are still called the first point and the last point, respectively, of this copy. We will call them the *extremal points* of this copy; later it will be seen that, in our construction, these two points will really be extremal points of the copy with respect to the euclidean metric. We will also speak on the extremal points of the set $D(m)$, the first point of $D(m)$ being defined as the first point of the first brick in $D(m)$ and the last point of $D(m)$ being defined as the unique point of $D(m) \setminus D^*(m)$. Again, they will be extremal in the sense of the metric. In $D^*(0)$, see (6.11), the last point of the copy of \mathcal{K}_i coincides with the first point of the copy of \mathcal{K}_{i+1} , $i = 1, 2, \dots$. The sets $D^*(m)$, $m > 0$, are built analogously.

- Second, while in Section 4 we joined x_m and x_{m+1} by placing the set D_m along the straight line segment $x_m x_{m+1}$, see Figures 4.1-4.2, now the straight line segments are replaced by (polygonal) arcs. We have to choose these arcs very carefully and to place the sets $D(m)$ into sufficiently small neighborhoods of them. In fact, otherwise the snake could have cluster points in the plane π_0 also outside the head \mathcal{A}_0 and so X would not be compact. To be sure that the snake does not ‘produce’ cluster points in $\pi_0 \setminus \mathcal{A}_0$, as well as to avoid some other potential problems which will be discussed later, we proceed as shown in the next subsection.

Let us remark that not only the mentioned change in notation ($D(m)$, $m = 0, 1, \dots$ instead of D_m , $m = 1, 2, \dots$) is unimportant, but in fact the whole snake is even a *homeomorphic copy* of the snake from Section 4, compare Figure 4.3 and (6.11). However, the two snakes have different positions in \mathbb{R}^3 , meaning that they are not equivalently embedded in \mathbb{R}^3 , i.e. there is no homeomorphism $\mathbb{R}^3 \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^3$ mapping one snake onto the other one (note that the two heads are not homeomorphic).

6.2. More details of the construction of X .

We first introduce some terminology.

The trajectory of x_0 performs infinitely many jumps in the sense described in Section 5 (formally, a jump is a pair of points). So, we can use them to separate $\{x_0, x_1, x_2, \dots\}$ into a disjoint union of sets (finite sequences) $J(m)$, $m = 0, 1, \dots$, as follows:

- $J(0) = \{x_0, x_1, \dots, x_{j_0}\} = \{x_{k_0}, x_{k_0+1}, \dots, x_{k_0+j_0}\}$ where $k_0 = 0$ and j_0 is the smallest positive integer such that x_{j_0} is the first point of a jump (then x_{j_0+1} is the last point of this jump). In Figure 5.2, $j_0 = 3$.
- $J(1) = \{x_{k_1}, x_{k_1+1}, \dots, x_{k_1+j_1}\}$ where $k_1 = j_0 + 1$ and j_1 is the smallest positive integer such that $x_{k_1+j_1}$ is the first point of a jump. In Figure 5.2, $k_1 = 4$ and in Figure 5.3 we see $x_{k_1+j_1}$ as the point on the right hand side of a_∞ , from which the trajectory jumps to the left hand side of a_∞ (to be precise, in the figure we see the P_2 -projections of those points).

- In general, for $m \geq 1$, $J(m) = \{x_{k_m}, x_{k_m+1}, \dots, x_{k_m+j_m}\}$ where $k_m = k_{m-1} + j_{m-1} + 1$, and j_m is the smallest positive integer such that $x_{k_m+j_m}$ is the first point of a jump.

So, these sets are maximal intervals in $\{x_0, x_1, x_2, \dots\}$ containing no jump. A jump can only be performed from the last point of $J(m)$ to the first point of $J(m+1)$. The set $J(m)$ is called the m -th jump level. Note that it contains exactly one pair of points whose P_2 -projections are a_0 and a_1 .

Fix $m \geq 0$. Recall that $P_2(J(m))$ is a block of consecutive points of $\{a_i : i \in \mathbb{Z}\}$. Let a_k and a_{k+1} be two neighboring points in $P_2(J(m))$. They are P_2 -projections of two neighboring points from $J(m)$ which we denote by $x_k^{[m]}$ and $x_{k+1}^{[m]}$, respectively (the latter one is closer to π_0 than the former one).¹⁷ Among all planes containing the points $x_k^{[m]}$ and $x_{k+1}^{[m]}$, let $\mathcal{P}_k^{[m]}$ be the one whose angle with π_0 is the same as the angle of the line $x_k^{[m]}x_{k+1}^{[m]}$ with π_0 , i.e. the plane whose intersection with π_0 is the line perpendicular to the line $x_k^{[m]}x_{k+1}^{[m]}$.

If m is given and $\mathcal{P}_k^{[m]}$ exists, then for every set $M \subseteq \pi_0$ lying in the sector \mathcal{S}_k we define its lift to $\mathcal{P}_k^{[m]}$, or the $[m]$ -lift of M , by

$$M^{[m]} = M_k^{[m]} := \{x \in \mathcal{P}_k^{[m]} : P_2(x) \in M\}. \quad (6.12)$$

The homeomorphism $Z_k : \pi_0 \rightarrow \pi_0$ can be lifted to a homeomorphism $Z_k^{[m]} : \mathcal{P}_0^{[m]} \rightarrow \mathcal{P}_k^{[m]}$. It is defined by the equality

$$P_2 \circ Z_k^{[m]} = Z_k \circ P_2$$

(in particular, $Z_0^{[m]}$ is the identity).

If $\mathcal{P}_k^{[m]}$ is defined (hence $Z_k^{[m]}$ is defined), then the $Z_k^{[m]}$ -image of a set (i.e., a $Z_k^{[m]}$ -copy of a set) is sometimes less precisely said to be a $Z^{[m]}$ -copy of that set (i.e. without specifying k). A family of sets is said to be $Z^{[m]}$ -homeomorphic if each of them is a $Z_k^{[m]}$ -copy of the same set (the values of k are different for different sets in the family, while m is the same). Clearly, such sets are pairwise homeomorphic.

Now let $H \subseteq \pi_0$ be a polygonal arc with the first point c_1 and the last point c_k , say the union of straight line segments $[c_1, c_2], [c_2, c_3], \dots, [c_{k-1}, c_k]$. If they are maximal straight line segments in H , they are called the *links* of H and the points c_2, \dots, c_{k-1} are called the *turning points* of H . The first point c_1 and the last point c_k of H are also called the *extremal points* of H . We define the *distance of any points $a, b \in H$ along H* , denoted by $l_H(a, b)$, as follows:

- If $a, b \in [c_i, c_{i+1}]$ for some i , then $l_H(a, b) = d(a, b)$, where d is the euclidean metric in π_0 .
- If $a \in [c_i, c_{i+1}]$, $b \in [c_j, c_{j+1}]$ with $j > i$, then

$$l_H(a, b) = d(a, c_{i+1}) + \sum_{t=i+1}^{j-1} d(c_t, c_{t+1}) + d(c_j, b).$$

The case $i > j$ is covered by requiring $l_H(a, b) = l_H(b, a)$. Notice that if $a, b \in H$ then $d(a, b) \leq l_H(a, b)$. Given different points $a, b \in H$, let $[a, b]_H$ be the polygonal arc which is a subset of H and has endpoints a and b ; so, $l_H(a, b)$ is the length of the arc $[a, b]_H$.

Now we are going to choose, in the plane π_0 , some polygonal arcs ‘close’ to \mathcal{H}_0 and joining a_0 and a_1 , then some polygonal arcs ‘close’ to \mathcal{H}_k , $k \neq 0$, and joining a_k and a_{k+1} , and finally the polygonal arcs, in this case in fact straight line segments, ‘along’ the P_2 -projections of jumps (meaning that such a straight line segment joins the P_2 -projections of the points forming a jump).

First consider \mathcal{H}_0 . Let \mathcal{V}_0^m be the open $(1/2^m)$ -neighbourhood of \mathcal{H}_0 in π_0 , $m = 0, 1, \dots$. Then, since \mathcal{H}_0 is closed,

$$\mathcal{V}_0^0 \supseteq \mathcal{V}_0^1 \supseteq \dots \quad \text{and} \quad \bigcap_{m=0}^{\infty} \mathcal{V}_0^m = \mathcal{H}_0. \quad (6.13)$$

¹⁷Note that, given $m \geq 0$, $x_k^{[m]}$ exists only for finitely many integers k , because $J(m)$ is finite. Given an integer k , $x_k^{[m]}$ exists for all sufficiently large $m \geq 0$.

By Lemma 2.16, for any nonnegative m , the points a_0 and a_1 can be joined by a polygonal arc $H_0^m \subseteq \mathcal{V}_0^m$. Moreover, since \mathcal{H}_0 is a subset of the big rhombus BR_0 , there exists even a polygonal arc H_0^m joining a_0 and a_1 such that

$$H_0^m \subseteq \mathcal{V}_0^m \cap BR_0 . \quad (6.14)$$

In fact, for every point $X_o \in \pi_0 \setminus BR_0$ there exists its projection into BR_0 , i.e. a unique point X_b in the boundary of BR_0 which is closest to X_o among all points of BR_0 . When we replace those points of H_0^m which are outside BR_0 by their projections into BR_0 , we obtain a new polygonal arc joining a_0 and a_1 , already satisfying (6.14). Since \mathcal{V}_0^m is open and H_0^m is compact, we may even assume that, in (6.14), the polygonal arc H_0^m lies in the interior of BR_0 with the exception of its extremal points which coincide with the endpoints of the longer diagonal of BR_0 . Thus,

$$H_0^m \subseteq \mathcal{V}_0^m \cap BR_0 \text{ with all non-extremal points of } H_0^m \text{ in } \text{Int}(BR_0) . \quad (6.15)$$

If a set A is in the open ε -neighbourhood of a set B , we say that A is ε -close to B .¹⁸ The fact that H_0^m is in the open $(1/2^m)$ -neighbourhood \mathcal{V}_0^m of \mathcal{H}_0 thus means that

$$H_0^m \text{ is } (1/2^m)\text{-close to } \mathcal{H}_0 . \quad (6.16)$$

Figure 6.2 illustrates the situation.

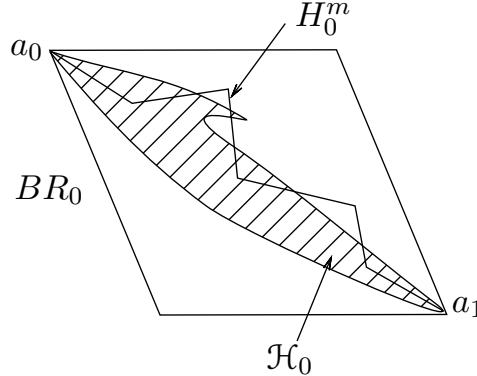


FIGURE 6.2. The Cook continuum \mathcal{H}_0 and the polygonal arc H_0^m in the big rhombus BR_0 , with only the extremal points a_0 and a_1 in its boundary. The arc H_0^m is $(1/2^m)$ -close to the continuum \mathcal{H}_0 .

We choose finitely many points in H_0^m satisfying the following ‘equidistant points conditions’.

(EP1) The points $a_0, (b_0^m)_1, (b_0^m)_2, \dots, (b_0^m)_{n_0^m}, a_1 \in H_0^m$ are equidistant with respect to $l_{H_0^m}$, i.e.

$$l_{H_0^m}(a_0, (b_0^m)_1) = l_{H_0^m}((b_0^m)_1, (b_0^m)_2) = \dots = l_{H_0^m}((b_0^m)_{n_0^m}, a_1) =: r_0^m .$$

This family is said to be the (*distinguished*) *equidistant family* in H_0^m or the (*distinguished*) family of equidistant points in H_0^m . The number r_0^m is said to be the *equidistance constant* of H_0^m .¹⁹ The considered equidistant points divide H_0^m into finitely many (in fact $n_0^m + 1$) subarcs. In the sequel we will call them *equi-subarcs* of H_0^m . The family of them is naturally ordered, the first equi-subarc being the one containing a_0 .

(EP2) n_0^m is so large, i.e. r_0^m is so small, that each equi-subarc of H_0^m contains at most one turning point of H_0^m in its interior (in the topology of H_0^m inherited from the plane π_0).

(EP3) $n_0^m \geq 3$ is so large that the first two equi-subarcs and the last equi-subarc of H_0^m are straight line segments.

¹⁸Note the lack of symmetry: If A is ε -close to B then B need not be ε -close to A .

¹⁹More precisely, we should speak on the equidistance constant of H_0^m with respect to that family of points or on the equidistance constant of the considered family of points with respect to H_0^m .

(EP4) n_0^m is so large that

$$[a_0, (b_0^m)_1]_{H_0^m} = \overline{B}_d(a_0, r_0^m) \cap H_0^m \quad \text{and} \quad [(b_0^m)_{n_0^m}, a_1]_{H_0^m} = \overline{B}_d(a_1, r_0^m) \cap H_0^m$$

where $\overline{B}_d(x, \delta)$ is the closed ball, with respect to the euclidean metric d , with centre x and radius δ . Notice that, by (EP3), on the left hand sides we have straight line segments and not just polygonal arcs.

(EP5) The sequence $(n_0^m)_{m=0}^\infty$ increases so fast that, for any nonnegative m ,

$$0 < r_0^{m+1} < (1/2)r_0^m, \quad \text{hence } r_0^m \searrow 0 \text{ as } m \rightarrow \infty.$$

For $m \geq 0$, the homeomorphism Z_k sends

- the open neighbourhood \mathcal{V}_0^m of \mathcal{H}_0 to the open neighbourhood $\mathcal{V}_k^m := Z_k(\mathcal{V}_0^m)$ of \mathcal{H}_k , with (see (6.13))

$$\mathcal{V}_k^0 \supseteq \mathcal{V}_k^1 \supseteq \dots \quad \text{and} \quad \bigcap_{m=0}^\infty \mathcal{V}_k^m = \mathcal{H}_k; \quad (6.17)$$

- the polygonal arc H_0^m joining a_0 and a_1 to the polygonal arc $H_k^m := Z_k(H_0^m)$ joining a_k and a_{k+1} (in particular, the turning points of H_0^m are mapped to the turning points of H_k^m), where, due to (6.15),

$$H_k^m \subseteq \mathcal{V}_k^m \cap BR_k \text{ with all non-extremal points of } H_k^m \text{ in } \text{Int}(BR_k) \quad (6.18)$$

and, since the similitudes Z_k do not increase distances, due to (6.16) we have that

$$H_k^m \text{ is } (1/2^m)\text{-close to } \mathcal{H}_k; \quad (6.19)$$

- the points $a_0, (b_0^m)_1, (b_0^m)_2, \dots, (b_0^m)_{n_0^m}, a_1 \in H_0^m$ with the equidistance constant r_0^m to the same number of points $a_k, (b_k^m)_1, (b_k^m)_2, \dots, (b_k^m)_{n_0^m}, a_{k+1} \in H_k^m$.

Since Z_k is a similitude, we have the following analogues of (EP1)-(EP5).

(EP6) The family of points $a_k, (b_k^m)_1, (b_k^m)_2, \dots, (b_k^m)_{n_0^m}, a_{k+1} \in H_k^m$, being the Z_k -image of the equidistant family of points in H_0^m , is an equidistant family of points in H_k^m , with some equidistance constant $r_k^m \leq r_0^m$ (with equality only for $k = 0, -1$, see (6.6)) with respect to $l_{H_k^m}$.

(EP7) Each equi-subarc of H_k^m contains at most one turning point of H_k^m in its interior.

(EP8) The first two equi-subarcs and the last equi-subarc of H_k^m are straight line segments.

(EP9) $[a_k, (b_k^m)_1]_{H_k^m} = \overline{B}_d(a_k, r_k^m) \cap H_k^m$ and $[(b_k^m)_{n_0^m}, a_{k+1}]_{H_k^m} = \overline{B}_d(a_{k+1}, r_k^m) \cap H_k^m$.

(EP10) $0 < r_k^{m+1} < (1/2)r_k^m$, hence $r_k^m \searrow 0$ as $m \rightarrow \infty$.

Finally, for any nonnegative m consider the m -th jump, i.e. the jump from $J(m)$ to $J(m+1)$, and let $L^m \subseteq \pi_0$ be the straight line segment whose endpoints are $P_2(x_{k_m+j_m}), P_2(x_{k_{m+1}}) \in A$, i.e. the P_2 -projections of the two points forming the jump (here $k_{m+1} = k_m + j_m + 1$). Let \mathcal{U}^m be the open $(1/2^m)$ -neighbourhood of L^m in π_0 (for each L^m we consider just one neighbourhood \mathcal{U}^m). In an obvious sense,

$$\text{the neighbourhoods } \mathcal{U}^m \text{ of } L^m \text{ converge to the point } a_\infty \text{ as } m \rightarrow \infty. \quad (6.20)$$

We choose finitely many points in L^m satisfying the following conditions.

(EP11) The points $P_2(x_{k_m+j_m}), (c_L^m)_1, (c_L^m)_2, \dots, (c_L^m)_{n_0^m}, P_2(x_{k_{m+1}}) \in L^m$ are equidistant with respect to (both d and) l_{L^m} , with the equidistance constant r_L^m . Note that the number of these points is the same as the number of the chosen distinguished points in H_0^m or in H_k^m . Notice that the analogues of (EP2)-(EP4), or (EP7)-(EP9), are trivial.

(EP12) Since the number of points in (EP11) tends to infinity and the length of L^m converge to zero, we get $r_L^m \rightarrow 0$ as $m \rightarrow \infty$.

Now consider the trajectory

$$\underbrace{x_0, x_1, \dots, x_{j_0}}_{J(0)}, \quad \underbrace{x_{k_1}, x_{k_1+1}, \dots, x_{k_1+j_1}}_{J(1)}, \quad \underbrace{x_{k_2}, \dots}_{J(2)}, \quad \dots$$

and also the sequence of P_2 -projections of these points. These two sequences can be seen in the first and the second row of Table 6, respectively. In the table we of course have $p_0 = j_0$. All the integers n_i and p_i are positive. It follows from the construction of the trajectory of x_0 that $n_i \rightarrow \infty$ and $p_i \rightarrow \infty$.

x_0	x_1	\dots	x_{j_0-1}	x_{j_0}	x_{k_1}	x_{k_1+1}	\dots	$x_{k_1+j_1-1}$	$x_{k_1+j_1}$	x_{k_2}	\dots
a_0	a_1	\dots	a_{p_0-1}	a_{p_0}	a_{-n_1}	a_{-n_1+1}	\dots	a_{p_1-1}	a_{p_1}	a_{-n_2}	\dots

TABLE 6. Trajectory of x_0 and its P_2 -projection

While the trajectory of x_0 is injective, its P_2 -projection in the second row contains for instance the periodic subsequence $a_0, a_1, a_0, a_1, \dots$. Consider the following sequence of polygonal arcs which join the consecutive points of the sequence $P_2(x_0) = a_0, P_2(x_1) = a_1, \dots$:

$$\underbrace{H_0^0, H_1^0, \dots, H_{p_0-1}^0}_{H_k^0=Z_k(H_0^0)}, \quad L^0, \quad \underbrace{H_{-n_1}^1, H_{-n_1+1}^1, \dots, H_{p_1-1}^1}_{H_k^1=Z_k(H_0^1)}, \quad L^1, \quad H_{-n_2}^2, \dots \quad (6.21)$$

Notice that this sequence contains a subsequence of polygonal arcs $H_0^0, H_0^1, H_0^2, \dots$ which are used to join the pairs of points a_0 and a_1 from the above mentioned periodic sequence. In the second row of the following Table 7 we summarize the equidistance constants for the arcs from (6.21). By (EP5), (EP10), (EP12) and the fact that $r_k^m \leq r_0^m$ we know that they converge to zero.

H_0^0	H_1^0	\dots	$H_{p_0-1}^0$	L^0	$H_{-n_1}^1$	$H_{-n_1+1}^1$	\dots	$H_{p_1-1}^1$	L^1	$H_{-n_2}^2$	\dots
r_0^0	r_1^0	\dots	$r_{p_0-1}^0$	r_L^0	$r_{-n_1}^1$	$r_{-n_1+1}^1$	\dots	$r_{p_1-1}^1$	r_L^1	$r_{-n_2}^2$	\dots

TABLE 7. Polygonal arcs joining the points of the P_2 -projection of the trajectory of x_0 and their equidistance constants (converging to zero)

Now we are going to lift the polygonal arcs from (6.21) (together with the distinguished families of equidistant points in them), in order to join the consecutive points of the trajectory x_0, x_1, \dots . We use lifts as follows.

- For each arc from (6.21) which is of the form H_i^m (and so is a subset of the big rhombus BR_i in the sector S_i) we use its $[m]$ -lift, see (6.12).
- For each straight line segment $L^m \subseteq \pi_0$ joining the points a_{p_m} and $a_{-n_{m+1}}$, see Table 6, we use, as its lift, the straight line segment joining the points $x_{k_m+j_m}$ and $x_{k_{m+1}}$, i.e. the last point of $J(m)$ and the first point of $J(m+1)$.

For each polygonal arc H from (6.21) we have thus defined, in a unique way, its *lift*. We denote this lift by $\mathcal{L}(H)$ and we also call it the *regular polygonal arc above H* . However, if $\mathcal{L}(H)$ has endpoints x_h and x_{h+1} , then a ‘natural’ notation for this lift is $\mathcal{L}(h)$, so we have the sequence $\mathcal{L}(0), \mathcal{L}(1), \mathcal{L}(2), \dots$. In Table 8, each of the considered regular polygonal arcs is placed in the third row just below its first point (the next point to the right is its last point). In the fourth row we write the mentioned ‘natural’ notation. Any two arcs are of course homeomorphic. Some of the considered arcs are even $Z^{[m]}$ -homeomorphic for some m , as shown in the last row of the table. By the construction, see also (6.14) and (6.18), the lifts in the table intersect only in their common endpoints.

$J(0)$				$J(1)$				\dots	
x_0	\dots	x_{j_0-1}	x_{j_0}	x_{k_1}	\dots	$x_{k_1+j_1-1}$	$x_{k_1+j_1}$	x_{k_2}	\dots
$\mathcal{L}(H_0^0)$	\dots	$\mathcal{L}(H_{p_0-1}^0)$	$\mathcal{L}(L^0)$	$\mathcal{L}(H_{-n_1}^1)$	\dots	$\mathcal{L}(H_{p_1-1}^1)$	$\mathcal{L}(L^1)$	$\mathcal{L}(H_{-n_2}^2)$	\dots
$\mathcal{L}(0)$	\dots	$\mathcal{L}(j_0 - 1)$	$\mathcal{L}(j_0)$	$\mathcal{L}(j_0 + 1)$	\dots	$\mathcal{L}(j_0 + j_1)$	$\mathcal{L}(j_0 + j_1 + 1)$	$\mathcal{L}(j_0 + j_1 + 2)$	\dots
$Z^{[0]}$ -copies of $\mathcal{L}(H_0^0)$			$Z^{[1]}$ -copies of $\mathcal{L}(H_0^1)$						\dots

TABLE 8. The regular polygonal arcs joining the elements of the trajectory of x_0

The distinguished equidistant family of points in a polygonal arc H from (6.21) is lifted to the family of points in $\mathcal{L}(H)$ with the same cardinality but, in general, this lifted family of points is not equidistant.

The polygonal arcs from (6.21) can be viewed as the P_2 -projections of their lifts. The first and the second row of the following Table 9 show these arcs written in two alternative ways. The third row of the table contains their equidistance constants, but redenoted; this new notation will be more convenient than the one from Table 7.

H_0^0	...	$H_{p_0-1}^0$	L^0	$H_{-n_1}^1$	...	$H_{p_1-1}^1$	L^1	...
$P_2(\mathcal{L}(0))$	...	$P_2(\mathcal{L}(j_0 - 1))$	$P_2(\mathcal{L}(j_0))$	$P_2(\mathcal{L}(j_0 + 1))$	...	$P_2(\mathcal{L}(j_0 + j_1))$	$P_2(\mathcal{L}(j_0 + j_1 + 1))$	...
$r(0)$	...	$r(j_0 - 1)$	$r(j_0)$	$r(j_0 + 1)$	...	$r(j_0 + j_1)$	$r(j_0 + j_1 + 1)$	...

TABLE 9. Polygonal arcs joining the points of the P_2 -projection of the trajectory of x_0 , an alternative notation. The equidistance constants $r(j) \rightarrow 0$.

Recall (6.16) and (6.19). Further, since $L^m \subseteq \mathcal{U}^m$, (6.20) shows that, for some $\delta(m)$,

$$L^m \text{ is } \delta(m)\text{-close to } a_\infty \text{ and } \delta(m) \rightarrow 0 \text{ as } m \rightarrow \infty. \quad (6.22)$$

The situation is shown in Table 10.

H_0^0	...	$H_{p_0-1}^0$	L^0	$H_{-n_1}^1$	...	$H_{p_1-1}^1$	L^1	...
$P_2(\mathcal{L}(0))$	...	$P_2(\mathcal{L}(j_0 - 1))$	$P_2(\mathcal{L}(j_0))$	$P_2(\mathcal{L}(j_0 + 1))$	...	$P_2(\mathcal{L}(j_0 + j_1))$	$P_2(\mathcal{L}(j_0 + j_1 + 1))$	...
\mathcal{H}_0	...	\mathcal{H}_{p_0-1}	$\delta(0)$ -close to $\{a_\infty\}$	\mathcal{H}_{-n_1}	...	\mathcal{H}_{p_1-1}	$\delta(1)$ -close to $\{a_\infty\}$	...

TABLE 10. Polygonal arcs $P_2(\mathcal{L}(j)) \subseteq \pi_0$ approach the head. Here $\delta(m) \rightarrow 0$.

We are going to finish the definition of the snake. For every $j \geq 0$, the continuum $D(j)$ joining the points x_j and x_{j+1} will lie in a plane $\mathcal{P}(j)$:

$$x_j, x_{j+1} \in D(j) \subseteq \mathcal{P}(j).$$

With few exceptions (corresponding to the jumps), $\mathcal{P}(j)$ will be one of the planes $\mathcal{P}_k^{[m]}$ introduced earlier. To define $\mathcal{P}(j)$, fix j and take into account that $x_j \in J(m)$ for some $m \geq 0$. There are two possibilities.

- (i) If also x_{j+1} belongs to $J(m)$, the P_2 -projections of x_j and x_{j+1} are some consecutive points a_k and a_{k+1} from A . Then put $\mathcal{P}(j) := \mathcal{P}_k^{[m]}$.
- (ii) If x_j is the last point of $J(m)$, then x_{j+1} is the first point of $J(m+1)$ and so these two points form the m -th jump. Then let $\mathcal{P}(j)$ be that plane containing x_j and x_{j+1} whose intersection with π_0 is the line perpendicular to the line containing x_j and x_{j+1} (recall that x_{j+1} is closer to π_0 than x_j).

So, we have

$$x_j, x_{j+1} \in \mathcal{L}(j) \subseteq \mathcal{P}(j), \quad j = 0, 1, \dots \quad (6.23)$$

For each j ,

we place $D(j)$ in a ‘nice way’ along the regular polygonal arc $\mathcal{L}(j)$

(see (6.10) and (6.11)). By this we first of all mean that we choose homeomorphic copies of the sets $D(j)$, but still denoted by the same symbols $D(j)$, satisfying the following three ‘placing conditions’ for every j .

- (PL1) The first point and the last point of $D(j)$ coincide with the first point x_j and the last point x_{j+1} of the polygonal arc $\mathcal{L}(j)$, respectively.
- (PL2) The set $E(j)$ consisting of the extremal points of $D(j)$ and the extremal points of all bricks in $D(j)$ is a subset of the polygonal arc $\mathcal{L}(j)$ and is ordered along $\mathcal{L}(j)$ in the ‘natural’ way, i.e. as in Section 4 (where, however, the role of $\mathcal{L}(j)$ is played by a straight line segment): the first point of $D(j) = x_j =$ the 1st point of the 1st brick, then the last point of the 1st brick = the first point of the 2nd brick, then the last point of the 2nd brick, etc., and finally the last point of $D(j)$.
- (PL3) The set $E(j) \subseteq \mathcal{L}(j)$ contains, among others,
 - the set $E_{eq}(j)$ of all the points of $\mathcal{L}(j)$ which are the lifts of the points from the distinguished equidistant family of points in the polygonal arc $P_2(\mathcal{L}(j))$,²⁰ and also
 - all the points of $\mathcal{L}(j)$ which are the lifts of the turning points of the polygonal arc $P_2(\mathcal{L}(j))$.

²⁰In spite of this and in spite of the notation, note that $E_{eq}(j)$ is in general not equidistant with respect to $\ell_{\mathcal{L}(j)}$.

Since $E(j)$ is by definition infinite, it has to contain also some other points from $\mathcal{L}(j)$. In other words, (PL1)–PL(3) admit many ways of placing the set $D(j)$ along $\mathcal{L}(j)$ — the points of the two kinds mentioned in (PL3) divide $\mathcal{L}(j)$ into finitely many *straight line segments*, and we have to choose how many consecutive bricks of $D(j)$ will be placed along the individual segments. Of course, along each of them we have to place at least one brick and along the last of them we have to place a ‘tail’ consisting of infinitely many bricks. Though the particular way how we do that will be specified below, in Subsection 6.4, for a moment suppose that we have already chosen the extremal points of all the bricks in the snake. This assumption allows us to describe in more details how we place the sets $D(j)$ along $\mathcal{L}(j)$.

Fix $j \geq 0$. By (6.11) we can write $D^*(j)$ as the union of bricks, call them now $B_{j,n}$, $n = 1, 2, \dots$:

$$D^*(j) = \bigcup_{n=1}^{\infty} B_{j,n} . \tag{6.24}$$

Let $f_{j,n}$ and $\ell_{j,n}$ be the first and the last point of $B_{j,n}$, respectively. The polygonal arc $P_2(\mathcal{L}(j))$ is one of the polygonal arcs H_k^m or one of the straight line segments L^m , see e.g. Table 10.

First suppose that $P_2(\mathcal{L}(j)) = H_k^m$ for some $m \geq 0$ and $k \in \mathbb{Z}$. Recall that H_k^m is a subset of the big rhombus BR_k and that even (6.18) holds. Due to (PL3), for every n we have that $[f_{j,n}, \ell_{j,n}]_{\mathcal{L}(j)}$ is a straight line segment in $\mathcal{L}(j)$ and so $P_2([f_{j,n}, \ell_{j,n}]_{\mathcal{L}(j)}) \subseteq H_k^m$ is a straight line segment with the endpoints $P_2(f_{j,n})$ and $P_2(\ell_{j,n})$. For every n , we choose a ‘small’ rhombus $SR_{j,n}$ such that the longer diagonal of $SR_{j,n}$ is the straight line segment $P_2([f_{j,n}, \ell_{j,n}]_{\mathcal{L}(j)})$ and the other diagonal is short enough so that the small rhombuses $SR_{j,n}$ for $n = 1, 2, \dots$ are pairwise disjoint, except that the consecutive rhombuses have one vertex in common. Moreover, due to (6.18) we may choose this ‘chain’ of small rhombuses in such a way that it completely lies in the big rhombus BR_k :

$$\bigcup_{n=1}^{\infty} SR_{j,n} \subseteq BR_k .$$

By lifting the small rhombuses $SR_{j,n}$ to $\mathcal{P}(j)$ we get quadrilaterals $Q_{j,n} \subseteq \mathcal{P}(j)$ (in fact parallelograms, but not necessarily rhombuses).²¹ They are pairwise disjoint except that two consecutive quadrilaterals have one vertex in common, because the small rhombuses have such a property. See Figure 6.3.

Now suppose that $P_2(\mathcal{L}(j)) = L^m$ for some $m \geq 0$ (we say that $D(j)$ is going to be placed along the straight line segment $\mathcal{L}(j)$ or along the m -th jump). Then we proceed analogously. Again we choose, now along the straight line segment L^m , small rhombuses $SR_{j,n}$ which are pairwise disjoint, except that two consecutive rhombuses have one point in common. Here L^m corresponds to a jump, so this chain of small rhombuses is between two chains of small rhombuses corresponding to the neighbouring sets $D(j - 1)$ and $D(j + 1)$, and so placed along polygonal arcs in some big rhombuses as already explained above. Since the jump is almost horizontal (in the sense explained below the formula (5.13)), we can choose the small rhombuses along L^m in such a way that they are disjoint from those corresponding to $D(j - 1)$ and $D(j + 1)$. Again, by lifting $SR_{j,n}$ to $\mathcal{P}(j)$ we get quadrilaterals $Q_{j,n} \subseteq \mathcal{P}(j)$ (one can see that in this case they are in fact rhombuses) which are pairwise disjoint except that two consecutive quadrilaterals have one vertex in common. See Figure 6.4.

Thus, for every $j \geq 0$, $n \geq 1$ and corresponding brick $B_{j,n}$ as in (6.24), we choose a small rhombus $SR_{j,n} \subseteq \pi_0$ and a quadrilateral $Q_{j,n} \subseteq \mathcal{P}(j)$. The consecutive points of the trajectory x_0, x_1, \dots are joined by chains of quadrilaterals, so we have in fact a chain of chains of quadrilaterals. According to our choice of them, and the fact that the distances of the points x_j from the plane π_0 strictly decrease, it is obvious that all the quadrilaterals are pairwise disjoint except that if two of them are consecutive (and so lie in one of those chains of quadrilaterals) then they have one point in common.²²

Finally, we are ready to formulate the fourth ‘placing condition’.

²¹We do not introduce any notation for the lifts of the big rhombuses BR_k .

²²The family of all small rhombuses $SR_{j,n}$ in π_0 of course does not have this property. For instance, every point a_k , $k \in \mathbb{Z}$ belongs to infinitely many small rhombuses.

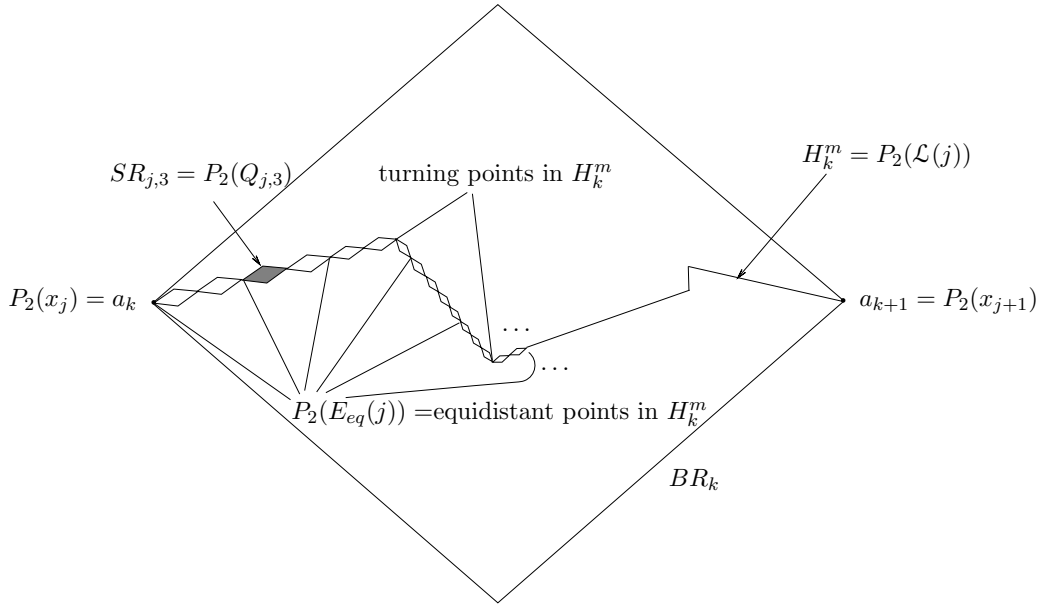
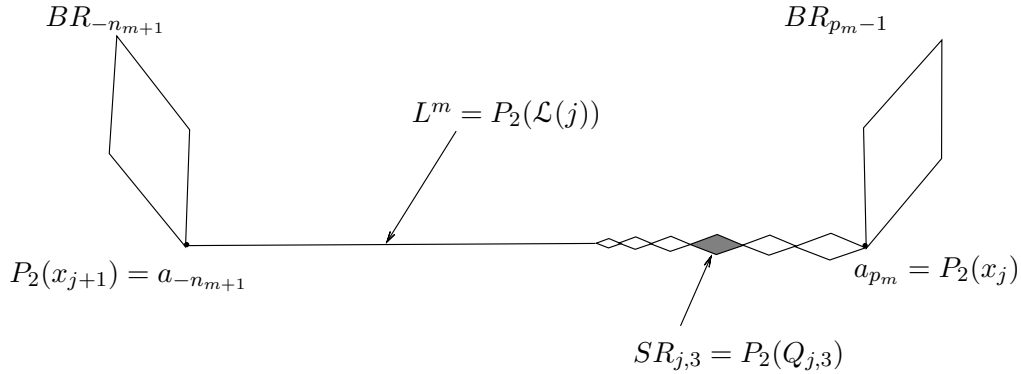


FIGURE 6.3. The chain of small rhombuses $SR_{j,n}$, $n = 1, 2, \dots$, placed along the polygonal arc $P_2(\mathcal{L}(j)) = H_k^m$ in the big rhombus BR_k . The lifts of $SR_{j,n}$ to $\mathcal{P}(j)$ are some quadrilaterals $Q_{j,n}$ placed along the polygonal arc $\mathcal{L}(j)$ joining the points x_j and x_{j+1} . Notice that, by (PL3) and the definition of small rhombuses, every turning point of H_k^m is a vertex of a small rhombus and the same is true for every point from the distinguished family of equidistant points in H_k^m .



1

FIGURE 6.4. The chain of small rhombuses along $P_2(\mathcal{L}(j))$. It is between two big rhombuses containing their own chains of small rhombuses. See Table 6 for the notation of the endpoints of L_m .

(PL4) Every brick $B_{j,n}$, see (6.24), is placed in the corresponding quadrilateral $Q_{j,n} \subseteq \mathcal{P}(j)$ in such a way that the first point and the last point of $B_{j,n}$ coincide with the first point and the last point of $Q_{j,n}$, respectively (these are the lifts of the first point and the last point of $SR_{j,n}$, respectively).

Note that, by (PL4), all the bricks in the snake are pairwise disjoint with the exception that two neighboring bricks intersect at one point (because the quadrilaterals containing them have such a property).

Clearly, for every j and n , $\text{diam } SR_{j,n} = \text{diam } P_2(B_{j,n}) = d(P_2(f_{j,n}), P_2(\ell_{j,n}))$. If the small rhombuses $SR_{j,n}$ are chosen narrow enough, i.e. with shorter diagonals short enough, then also $\text{diam } Q_{j,n} = \text{diam } B_{j,n} = d(f_{j,n}, \ell_{j,n})$ and even the following is true. We formulate it as the fifth ‘placing condition’.

(PL5) We choose small rhombuses narrow enough to ensure the following. If, for some $j \geq 0$, \mathcal{D} is a union of (finitely or infinitely many) consecutive bricks of $D^*(j)$, $\mathcal{SR}_{\mathcal{D}}$ and $\mathcal{Q}_{\mathcal{D}}$ are the unions of small rhombuses and quadrilaterals, respectively, corresponding to the bricks in \mathcal{D} , and $\mathcal{E}_{\mathcal{D}}$ is the set of extremal points of the bricks in \mathcal{D} , then

$$\text{diam } \mathcal{SR}_{\mathcal{D}} = \text{diam } P_2(\mathcal{D}) = \text{diam } P_2(\mathcal{E}_{\mathcal{D}})$$

and

$$\text{diam } \mathcal{Q}_{\mathcal{D}} = \text{diam } \mathcal{D} = \text{diam } \mathcal{E}_{\mathcal{D}} .$$

Indeed, no matter whether we are in the plane π_0 or in the plane $\mathcal{P}(j)$ (i.e. no matter whether we want to prove the first formula or the second one), a simple geometrical argument shows that the diameter of a polygonal arc is realized as the diameter of the finite set of the endpoints of all its links. Then one can see that if the small rhombuses are narrow enough, both formulas in (PL5) work.

Having described the head and the snake, we finally define our space, a candidate for the equality $S(X) = \{0, \log 2\}$, by

$$X = \text{head} \sqcup \text{snake} = \mathcal{A}_0 \sqcup \bigcup_{m=0}^{\infty} D(m) = \mathcal{A}_0 \sqcup \bigcup_{m=0}^{\infty} D^*(m). \quad (6.25)$$

Lemma 6.1. *The space $X \subseteq \mathbb{R}^3$ defined by (6.25) is a one-dimensional continuum.*

Proof. Due to the ‘closedness conditions’ which can be seen in Table 10 and taking into account (5.2), our construction ensures that all those cluster points of the snake which are in π_0 belong to the head \mathcal{A}_0 . Hence X is compact.²³ Moreover, X is one-dimensional and connected for the same reasons as the space X in Section 4. \square

6.3. A map $G: X \rightarrow X$ and a need to specify the geometry of X . The proof that $S(X) = \{0, \log 2\}$ will be similar to that in Section 4 (though we will still need to specify the geometry of our space X from (6.25) in more details). This means that

- we construct a map $G: X \rightarrow X$, in fact a continuous extension of the map $T: X_1 \rightarrow X_1$ with $h^*(T) = \log 2$, such that also $h^*(G) = \log 2$, and
- we show that, for every continuous map $F: X \rightarrow X$, either $h^*(F) = 0$ or $h^*(F) = h^*(G)$.

We define, for the space X from (6.25) and the map T from (6.2), the map $G: X \rightarrow X$ as follows:

- $G|_{X_1} = T$;
- for every $k \in \mathbb{Z}$, $G|_{\mathcal{H}_k}$ is the unique homeomorphism $\mathcal{H}_k \rightarrow \mathcal{H}_{k+1}$ (i.e. $G|_{\mathcal{H}_k} = Z_{k,k+1}|_{\mathcal{H}_k} = (Z_{k+1} \circ Z_k^{-1})|_{\mathcal{H}_k}$);
- for every $m \geq 0$, $G|_{D(m)}$ is the unique continuous surjective map $D(m) \rightarrow D(m+1)$ (see Lemma 4.14 and Figure 4.5).

In Section 4 the map G was trivially continuous and $h^*(G) = \infty$. Contrary to this, now we are facing the following two problems.

- While our map G , just defined above, is obviously continuous at all points of the snake, we still have not proved that it is continuous also at all points of the head. (The restrictions of G to the head and to the snake are clearly continuous, but we have not proved that these two continuous parts of G fit together to produce a continuous map on X . In Section 4 the continuity was trivial because G on the head was the identity and the diameters of D_m tended to zero. Now G on the head is not identity and the diameters of $D(m)$ do not tend to zero.)

²³We do not claim that the closure of the snake is the *whole* X , as it was the case in Section 4, since we do not know whether the snake approaches *every* point in every \mathcal{H}_k . However, with a little care we could modify the construction to get this – instead of just using Lemma 2.16 for joining the endpoints of \mathcal{H}_k , we would combine it with Lemma 2.9.

- While it is trivial that $h^*(G) \geq h^*(T) = \log 2$, this inequality alone does not imply that $h^*(G) = \log 2$. (In Section 4, see Lemma 4.25, we were in better situation, since $h^*(G) \geq h^*(T) = \infty$ trivially implies that $h^*(G) = \infty$.)

To cope with these two problems, we are going to specify the geometry of X in more details, by adding some additional requirements to our construction of X .

6.4. Specification of geometry of X . We have adopted placing conditions (PL1)–(PL5) for placing $D(j)$ along $\mathcal{L}(j)$. But still there is much freedom for doing that. Consider the sets $E_{eq}(j) \subseteq E(j)$ in $\mathcal{L}(j)$ from (PL3). The set $E_{eq}(j)$ is already chosen by our construction, the larger set $E(j)$ will depend on how we now place the bricks from $D(j)$ along $\mathcal{L}(j)$.²⁴

Since the set $E_{eq}(j)$ is obtained as a lift of the distinguished family of equidistant points in $P_2(\mathcal{L}(j))$, we will sometimes call it a distinguished family of points in $\mathcal{L}(j)$ (we do not say “equidistant” points, since the family need not be equidistant in $\mathcal{L}(j)$). The set $E_{eq}(j)$ divides $\mathcal{L}(j)$ into finitely many distinguished (polygonal) subarcs. In the sequel we will call them *lequi-subarcs of $\mathcal{L}(j)$* (meaning “lifts of equi-subarcs of $P_2(\mathcal{L}(j))$ ”). We order this family of lequi-subarcs in the natural way, the first of them being the one containing x_j , the first point of $\mathcal{L}(j)$. It follows from (EP2) and (EP7) that each of these lequi-subarcs contains at most one turning point. Note the following, which follows from (PL3).

- (PL3a) If a lequi-subarc *does* contain a (unique) turning point, in view of (PL3) we will have to place *at least two bricks* of $D(j)$ along this subarc. Moreover, we will have to do it in such a way that this turning point will coincide with the last point of some brick and with the first point of the next brick. However, we will not need to specify this pair of consecutive bricks — in case of placing more than two bricks along this subarc we have thus some freedom in choosing this pair.
- (PL3b) On the other hand, if a lequi-subarc contains no turning point, (PL3) gives us a freedom — we are allowed to place either only one brick or more bricks along this subarc.

We are going to specify the positions, along the polygonal arcs $\mathcal{L}(j)$, of the bricks from $D(j)$. When speaking on positions of bricks, we are not interested in all the details related to them. We in fact have in mind the positions of the corresponding quadrilaterals (basically just the positions of the extremal points of their longer diagonals), see (PL4). The reason is that everything what is important for us about the position of a brick is determined by the quadrilateral containing it. We hope that no misunderstanding will arise if we speak just on positions of bricks.

We start with $j = 0$, i.e. with $\mathcal{L}(0)$ and $D(0)$. The distinguished family $E_{eq}(0)$ of points in $\mathcal{L}(0)$ divides $\mathcal{L}(0)$ into finitely many lequi-subarcs. We place the first brick of $D(0)$ along the first of these lequi-subarcs. For each of the other lequi-subarcs except the last one, let the number of bricks placed along that lequi-subarc be the same as the total number of bricks placed along all the previous lequi-subarcs of $\mathcal{L}(0)$. So, the numbers of bricks placed along the lequi-subarcs, except the last one, are powers of two, starting with 1, 1, 2, 4. All the infinitely many remaining bricks of $D(0)$ are placed along the last lequi-subarc of $\mathcal{L}(0)$. This is in accordance with (PL3a) and (PL3b) because the first two lequi-subarcs, being lifts of straight line segments by (EP3), are straight line segments.

We will shortly say that the bricks of $D(0)$ are placed along $\mathcal{L}(0)$ according to *the rule “1, sums, ∞ ”*. We divide $D(0)$ into three parts: $D^{\text{front}}(0)$, $D^{\text{middle}}(0)$ and $D^{\text{end}}(0)$ as follows:

- $D^{\text{front}}(0)$ is the union of bricks (in fact one brick) placed along the first lequi-subarc of $\mathcal{L}(0)$,
- $D^{\text{end}}(0)$ is the union of (infinitely many) bricks placed along the last lequi-subarc of $\mathcal{L}(0)$, together with the last point of $\mathcal{L}(0)$,
- $D^{\text{middle}}(0)$ is the union of (finitely many) other bricks in $D(0)$.

Notice that these sets are not pairwise disjoint, because $D^{\text{middle}}(0)$ intersects each of the other two sets in one point.

Recall that $r(0) = r_0^0$ (see Table 7 and the alternative notation in Table 9). We may assume that

$$P_2(D^{\text{front}}(0)) = \overline{B}_d(a_0, r(0)) \cap P_2(D(0)) \quad \text{and} \quad P_2(D^{\text{end}}(0)) = \overline{B}_d(a_1, r(0)) \cap P_2(D(0)), \quad (6.26)$$

²⁴Here and below we for simplicity sometimes speak on $D(j)$, though it would perhaps be more precise to speak on $D^*(j)$.

though (EP1), (EP3) and (EP4) do not automatically ensure this. If necessary, we just choose n_0^0 larger enough, i.e. r_0^0 smaller enough, to get the first and the last equi-subarcs in (EP3) sufficiently short to get these properties. Finally, denote by N_0 the number of bricks in $D^{\text{front}}(0) \cup D^{\text{middle}}(0)$.

Now consider $0 < j < j_0$. We have $\mathcal{L}(j) = Z_j^{[0]}(\mathcal{L}(0))$, see Table 8. The same is true for the distinguished families of points in $\mathcal{L}(0)$ and $\mathcal{L}(j)$, i.e. $E_{eq}(j) = Z_j^{[0]}(E_{eq}(0))$, and so the cardinalities of these families are the same (the number of lequi-subarcs in $\mathcal{L}(0)$ is the same as in $\mathcal{L}(j)$ for $0 < j < j_0$). Following the pattern from the case $j = 0$, we place $D(j)$ along the polygonal arc $\mathcal{L}(j)$ according to the rule “1, sums, ∞ ”. Here $D(j)$ is not a copy of $D(0)$, it is given by (6.11).²⁵ In the same way as above for $j = 0$, we define the sets $D^{\text{front}}(j)$, $D^{\text{middle}}(j)$ and $D^{\text{end}}(j)$. We may also assume (see (EP8), (EP9) and (6.26)) that

$$P_2(D^{\text{front}}(j)) = \overline{B}_d(a_j, r(j)) \cap P_2(D(j)) \quad \text{and} \quad P_2(D^{\text{end}}(j)) = \overline{B}_d(a_{j+1}, r(j)) \cap P_2(D(j)). \quad (6.27)$$

Now consider $j = j_0$. Then $\mathcal{L}(j_0)$ corresponds to the 0-th jump, see Table 8, and it is a straight line segment with the cardinality of $E_{eq}(j_0)$ equal to the cardinality of $E_{eq}(j)$ for $0 \leq j < j_0$ (the number of lequi-subarcs in $\mathcal{L}(j_0)$ is the same as in $\mathcal{L}(j)$ for $0 \leq j < j_0$). Still according to the rule “1, sums, ∞ ”, we place $D(j_0)$, see (6.11), along $\mathcal{L}(j_0)$. In the same way as above, we define the sets $D^{\text{front}}(j_0)$, $D^{\text{middle}}(j_0)$ and $D^{\text{end}}(j_0)$. Since $\mathcal{L}(j_0)$ is a straight line segment, an analogue of (6.26) again holds.

Notice that for every j considered so far, i.e. for $0 \leq j \leq j_0$, the set $D^{\text{front}}(j) \cup D^{\text{middle}}(j)$ consists of N_0 bricks, as in case $j = 0$. The situation is summarized in Table 11 (where the lequi-subarcs are called just subarcs).

$D(j), \quad 0 \leq j \leq j_0$		
$D^{\text{front}}(j)$	$D^{\text{middle}}(j)$	$D^{\text{end}}(j)$
1 brick along 1st lequi-subarc	finitely many bricks	∞ many bricks along last lequi-subarc
N_0 bricks		

TABLE 11. $D(j)$ along the polygonal arc $\mathcal{L}(j)$ for j such that $x_j \in J(0)$. The rule is “1, sums, ∞ ”.

We have thus put restrictions on the geometry of the continua $D(j)$ joining the consecutive points of the 0-th jump level $J(0)$ and the 0-th jump.

Now we are going to work with the 1-st jump level $J(1)$ and the 1-th jump. We start with placing $D(t_1)$ where x_{t_1}, x_{t_1+1} is the unique pair of points in $J(1)$ with $P_2(x_{t_1}) = a_0$ and $P_2(x_{t_1+1}) = a_1$. Similarly as we have distributed the bricks of $D(0)$ along $\mathcal{L}(0)$ by the rule “1, sums, ∞ ”, we proceed with $D(t_1)$, though with a different rule. The family $E_{eq}(t_1)$ divides $\mathcal{L}(t_1)$ into lequi-subarcs. We place the bricks of $D(t_1)$ along them, but now according to *the rule* “ N_0 , sums, ∞ ”. This means the following. We place the first N_0 bricks of $D(t_1)$ along the first of these lequi-subarcs. Further, for each of the other lequi-subarcs except the last one, let the number of bricks placed along that lequi-subarc be the same as the total number of bricks placed along all the previous lequi-subarcs of $\mathcal{L}(t_1)$. All the infinitely many remaining bricks of $D(t_1)$ are placed along the last lequi-subarc of $\mathcal{L}(t_1)$. We also divide $D(t_1)$ into three parts: $D^{\text{front}}(t_1)$, $D^{\text{middle}}(t_1)$ and $D^{\text{end}}(t_1)$ as follows:

- $D^{\text{front}}(t_1)$ is the union of bricks (in fact N_0 bricks) placed along the first lequi-subarc of $\mathcal{L}(t_1)$,
- $D^{\text{end}}(t_1)$ is the union of (infinitely many) bricks placed along the last lequi-subarc of $\mathcal{L}(t_1)$, together with the last point of $\mathcal{L}(t_1)$,
- $D^{\text{middle}}(t_1)$ is the union of (finitely many) other bricks of $D(t_1)$.

Recall that $r(t_1) = r_0^1$. For analogous reasons as in case $j = 0$, we may assume that

$$P_2(D^{\text{front}}(t_1)) = \overline{B}_d(a_0, r(t_1)) \cap P_2(D(t_1)) \quad \text{and} \quad P_2(D^{\text{end}}(t_1)) = \overline{B}_d(a_1, r(t_1)) \cap P_2(D(t_1)). \quad (6.28)$$

Finally, denote by N_1 the number of bricks in $D^{\text{front}}(t_1) \cup D^{\text{middle}}(t_1)$.

²⁵This is an exception from the ‘rule’ that for passing from $j = 0$ to $0 < j < j_0$ one just needs to apply the similitude Z_j or its lift $Z_j^{[0]}$.

In the same way, according to the rule “ N_0 , sums, ∞ ” we place $D(j)$ along the polygonal arc $\mathcal{L}(j)$ not only for $j = t_1$, but also for all other $j_0 + 1 \leq j < j_0 + j_1 + 1$ (so, N_0 bricks are placed along the 1st lequi-subarc etc.). For each such j , we define the sets $D^{\text{front}}(j)$, $D^{\text{middle}}(j)$ and $D^{\text{end}}(j)$ in the same way as above for $j = t_1$. We also have an analogue of (6.28):

$$P_2(D^{\text{front}}(j)) = \overline{B}_d(P_2(x_j), r(j)) \cap P_2(D(j)) \quad \text{and} \quad P_2(D^{\text{end}}(j)) = \overline{B}_d(P_2(x_{j+1}), r(j)) \cap P_2(D(j)). \quad (6.29)$$

Further, still according to the rule “ N_0 , sums, ∞ ”, we place $D(j_0 + j_1 + 1)$ along the straight line segment $\mathcal{L}(j_0 + j_1 + 1)$ corresponding to the 1-st jump (i.e. N_0 bricks placed along the 1st lequi-subarc etc.), we define the sets $D^{\text{front}}(j_0 + j_1 + 1)$, $D^{\text{middle}}(j_0 + j_1 + 1)$ and $D^{\text{end}}(j_0 + j_1 + 1)$ and we again have an analogue of (6.28).

Notice that for every $j_0 + 1 \leq j \leq j_0 + j_1 + 1$, the set $D^{\text{front}}(j) \cup D^{\text{middle}}(j)$ consists of N_1 bricks. The situation is shown in Table 12.

$D(j), \quad j_0 + 1 \leq j \leq j_0 + j_1 + 1$		
$D^{\text{front}}(j)$	$D^{\text{middle}}(j)$	$D^{\text{end}}(j)$
N_0 bricks along 1st lequi-subarc	finitely many bricks	∞ many bricks along last lequi-subarc
N_1 bricks		

TABLE 12. $D(j)$ along the polygonal arc $\mathcal{L}(j)$ for j such that $x_j \in J(1)$. The rule is “ N_0 , sums, ∞ ”.

We have thus put restrictions on the geometry of the continua $D(j)$ joining the consecutive points of the 1-st jump level $J(1)$ and the 1-st jump.

We continue by induction. Suppose that, for $s \geq 2$, we have already put the restrictions on the geometry of the continua $D(j)$ joining the consecutive points of the jump levels $J(0), \dots, J(s-1)$ and the 0-th, $\dots, (s-1)$ -st jumps. Denote by $x_{t_s}, x_{t_{s+1}}$ the unique pair of points in $J(s)$ with $P_2(x_{t_s}) = a_0$ and $P_2(x_{t_{s+1}}) = a_1$, and consider the polygonal arc $\mathcal{L}(t_s)$ joining x_{t_s} and $x_{t_{s+1}}$. The family $E_{eq}(t_s)$ divides $\mathcal{L}(t_s)$ into lequi-subarcs. We place $D(t_s)$ along $\mathcal{L}(t_s)$ according to the rule “ N_{s-1} , sums, ∞ ”, we define the sets $D^{\text{front}}(t_s)$, $D^{\text{middle}}(t_s)$, $D^{\text{end}}(t_s)$ and we require also an analogue of (6.28). Finally, denote by N_s the number of bricks in $D^{\text{front}}(t_s) \cup D^{\text{middle}}(t_s)$.

In the same way, according to the rule “ N_{s-1} , sums, ∞ ” we place $D(j)$ along the polygonal arc $\mathcal{L}(j)$ not only for $j = t_s$, but also for any other $k_s \leq j < k_s + j_s$ (so, N_{s-1} bricks are placed along the 1st lequi-subarc etc.). For each such j , we define the sets $D^{\text{front}}(j)$, $D^{\text{middle}}(j)$ and $D^{\text{end}}(j)$ in the same way as above for $j = t_s$. We have also the analogues of (6.28) for $P_2(D^{\text{front}}(j))$ and $P_2(D^{\text{end}}(j))$, with a_0 and a_1 replaced by the first point and the last point of $P_2(\mathcal{L}(j))$, respectively, and with radius $r(j)$. Further, still according to the rule “ N_{s-1} , sums, ∞ ”, we place $D(k_s + j_s)$ along the straight line segment $\mathcal{L}(k_s + j_s)$ corresponding to the s -th jump (i.e. N_{s-1} bricks placed along the 1st lequi-subarc etc.), we define the sets $D^{\text{front}}(k_s + j_s)$, $D^{\text{middle}}(k_s + j_s)$ and $D^{\text{end}}(k_s + j_s)$ and we require also an analogue of (6.28).

Notice that for every $k_s \leq j \leq k_s + j_s$, the set $D^{\text{front}}(j) \cup D^{\text{middle}}(j)$ consists of N_s bricks. The situation is illustrated in Table 13.

$D(j), \quad k_s \leq j \leq k_s + j_s$		
$D^{\text{front}}(j)$	$D^{\text{middle}}(j)$	$D^{\text{end}}(j)$
N_{s-1} bricks along 1st lequi-subarc	finitely many bricks	∞ many bricks along last lequi-subarc
N_s bricks		

TABLE 13. $D(j)$ along the polygonal arc $\mathcal{L}(j)$ for j such that $x_j \in J(s)$. The rule is “ N_{s-1} , sums, ∞ ”.

We have thus put restrictions on the geometry of the continua $D(j)$ joining the consecutive points of the s -th jump level $J(s)$ and the s -th jump. The induction is finished.

6.5. Properties of the map G . In Subsection 6.3 we have defined a map $G: X \rightarrow X$. Recall that $G|_{X_1} = T$, for every integer k the map $G|_{\mathcal{H}_k}$ is the unique homeomorphism $\mathcal{H}_k \rightarrow \mathcal{H}_{k+1}$, i.e. $Z_{k,k+1}|_{\mathcal{H}_k}$, and, for every $m \geq 0$, $G|_{D^*(m)}$ is the unique *surjective* continuous map $D^*(m) \rightarrow D^*(m+1)$.

By (6.11), the set $D^*(m)$ is the union of some bricks $B_1, B_2, B_3, B_4, \dots$ and $D^*(m+1)$ is the union of copies of $B_2, B_4, B_6, B_8, \dots$. The map G maps the 1st brick of $D^*(m)$ to the first point of the 1st brick of $D^*(m+1)$, the 2nd brick of $D^*(m)$ onto the 1st brick of $D^*(m+1)$ and, in general,

$$G(n\text{-th brick of } D^*(m)) \subseteq \left\lfloor \frac{n+1}{2} \right\rfloor\text{-th brick of } D^*(m+1) \quad (6.30)$$

(if n is even we have equality and if n is odd then the left side is a singleton, namely the first point of the brick on the right side).

We introduce the following notations:

- $B_i^{(j)}$ is the union of all bricks placed along the i -th lequi-subarc of $\mathcal{L}(j)$,
- $b_i^{(j)}$ is the number of all bricks placed along the i -th lequi-subarc of $\mathcal{L}(j)$,
- $Q_i^{(j)}$ is the union of all quadrilaterals placed along the i -th lequi-subarc of $\mathcal{L}(j)$,
- $SR_i^{(j)}$ is the union of all small rhombuses placed along the i -th equi-subarc of $P_2(\mathcal{L}(j))$.

Let $j \geq 0$ be such that both x_j and x_{j+1} belong to $J(s)$, $s \geq 0$. Then the numbers of lequi-subarcs in $\mathcal{L}(j)$ and in $\mathcal{L}(j+1)$ are the same, denote them by t . Moreover, if we put $N_{-1} = 1$, we have (see Table 13)

$$b_1^{(j)} = b_2^{(j)} = N_{s-1}, b_3^{(j)} = 2N_{s-1}, \dots, b_{t-1}^{(j)} = 2^{t-3}N_{s-1} \text{ and } b_t^{(j)} = \infty$$

and exactly the same equalities for $b_i^{(j+1)}$, $i = 1, \dots, t$. A simple computation, using this and (6.30), shows that for such j we have

$$\begin{aligned} G(B_1^{(j)} \cup B_2^{(j)}) &= B_1^{(j+1)}, \\ G(B_k^{(j)}) &= B_{k-1}^{(j+1)}, \quad k = 3, 4, \dots, t-1, \\ G(B_t^{(j)}) &= B_{t-1}^{(j+1)} \cup B_t^{(j+1)}. \end{aligned} \quad (6.31)$$

Lemma 6.2. *Let x_j and x_{j+1} belong to the same set $J(s)$. Then*

$$\begin{aligned} G(D^{\text{front}}(j)) &\subseteq D^{\text{front}}(j+1), \\ G(D^{\text{middle}}(j)) &\subseteq D^{\text{front}}(j+1) \cup D^{\text{middle}}(j+1), \\ G(D^{\text{end}}(j)) &\subseteq D^{\text{middle}}(j+1) \cup D^{\text{end}}(j+1). \end{aligned}$$

Proof. The number of lequi-subarcs in $\mathcal{L}(j)$ and in $\mathcal{L}(j+1)$ are the same and, as mentioned above (6.31), the number of bricks placed along the i -th lequi-subarc is the same for $\mathcal{L}(j)$ and for $\mathcal{L}(j+1)$. Now use (6.31). \square

Lemma 6.3. *Let x_m, x_{m+1} either belong to $J(i)$ or form the i -th jump, and let x_k, x_{k+1} either belong to $J(s)$ or form the s -th jump for some $s > i$. Let*

$$x \in D^{\text{front}}(m) \cup D^{\text{middle}}(m)$$

and let n be the positive integer for which $G^n(x) \in D^*(k)$. Then

$$G^n(x) \in D^{\text{front}}(k) \text{ and so } d(P_2(G^n x), P_2(x_k)) \leq r(k).$$

Proof. Since $s > i$, the number of bricks in $D^{\text{front}}(k)$ is greater than or equal to the number of bricks in $D^{\text{front}}(m) \cup D^{\text{middle}}(m)$ (if $s = i + 1$, they are equal). Since G preserves the order of bricks in the snake,²⁶ the assumption $x \in D^{\text{front}}(m) \cup D^{\text{middle}}(m)$ implies $G^n(x) \in D^{\text{front}}(k)$. The inequality in the lemma then follows from (6.26) or one of its analogues mentioned below it, e.g. (6.27), (6.28), (6.29). \square

From the previous two lemmas we immediately get the following corollary.

Corollary 6.4. *For every $j \geq 0$, $G(D^{\text{front}}(j)) \subseteq D^{\text{front}}(j+1)$.*

²⁶We speak on non-strict order since two consecutive bricks can be mapped to one brick, one of those two bricks being mapped to a point.

Lemma 6.5. *Let $x_j, x_{j+1}, x_{j+2} \in J(s)$ for some $j \geq 0$ and $s \geq 0$ and so, for some $k \in \mathbb{Z}$, $P_2(x_j) = a_k$, $P_2(x_{j+1}) = a_{k+1}$, $P_2(x_{j+2}) = a_{k+2}$. Let $y \in D^*(j)$ and so $G(y) \in D^*(j+1)$. Then*

$$d(Z_{k,k+1}(P_2(y)), P_2(G(y))) \leq 2 \cdot r(j+1).$$

Proof. The arc $\mathcal{L}(j)$ joins x_j and x_{j+1} , the arc $P_2(\mathcal{L}(j))$ joins a_k and a_{k+1} . Similarly, $\mathcal{L}(j+1)$ joins x_{j+1} and x_{j+2} , $P_2(\mathcal{L}(j+1))$ joins a_{k+1} and a_{k+2} . Each of the four arcs is divided into the same number of distinguished subarcs (lequi-subarcs or equi-subarcs).

Assume that $y \in B_i^{(j)}$, i.e. y belongs to some brick placed along the i -th distinguished subarc of $\mathcal{L}(j)$. By (6.31),

$$G(y) \in B_{i-1}^{(j+1)} \cup B_i^{(j+1)} \tag{6.32}$$

where $B_{i-1}^{(j+1)}$ should be replaced by the empty set provided $i = 1$. Suppose that $i > 1$ (for $i = 1$ the proof is almost the same).

Since $y \in B_i^{(j)}$, we have $y \in Q_i^{(j)}$. Hence $P_2(y) \in SR_i^{(j)}$ and so $Z_{k,k+1}(P_2(y)) \in SR_i^{(j+1)}$. On the other hand, by (6.32) we have $G(y) \in Q_{i-1}^{(j+1)} \cup Q_i^{(j+1)}$ and so $P_2(G(y)) \in SR_{i-1}^{(j+1)} \cup SR_i^{(j+1)}$. Thus,

$$d(Z_{k,k+1}(P_2(y)), P_2(G(y))) \leq \text{diam}(SR_{i-1}^{(j+1)} \cup SR_i^{(j+1)}) \leq \text{diam} SR_{i-1}^{(j+1)} + \text{diam} SR_i^{(j+1)}.$$

The equidistance constant of $P_2(\mathcal{L}(j+1))$ is $r(j+1)$, see e.g. Table (9). Further, the euclidean distance of points on a polygonal arc is less than or equal to their distance along the arc. Therefore, by (PL5), each of the diameters on the right-hand side is less than or equal to $r(j+1)$. \square

Lemma 6.6. *The map $G: X \rightarrow X$ is continuous.*

Proof. The restrictions of G to the head and to the snake are both continuous by the construction of G . Since the snake is open in X and the head is not, it remains to prove that $G: X \rightarrow X$ is continuous at every point of the head. So, let z be a point from the head and let $y_k \in D^*(i_k)$, $k = 0, 1, \dots$ be a sequence of points from the snake converging to z . We want to show that $G(y_k) \rightarrow G(z)$.

First suppose that $z = a_\infty$. Then, by the construction, the sequence $G(D^*(i_k)) = D^*(i_k + 1)$ converges to a_∞ . Hence $G(y_k) \rightarrow a_\infty$. Since a_∞ is a fixed point of G , the continuity of G at a_∞ follows.

Now assume that $z \in \mathcal{H}_m$ for some $m \in \mathbb{Z}$ and that z is not an extremal point of \mathcal{H}_m . Then z is an interior point of \mathcal{H}_m in the topology of the head. It follows that the extremal points x_{i_k}, x_{i_k+1} of $D(i_k)$ are P_2 -projected onto the extremal points a_m, a_{m+1} of \mathcal{H}_m for all sufficiently large k . We may of course assume that this is the case for all k . Moreover, as the sequence of jumps converges in an obvious sense to a_∞ , for all sufficiently large k we have that neither the set $D(i_k + 1)$ is placed along a jump. Again, we may assume that this is the case for every k . So, we conclude that for every k there is s_k such that $x_{i_k}, x_{i_k+1}, x_{i_k+2} \in J(s_k)$. Then the P_2 -projections of these three points are a_m, a_{m+1}, a_{m+2} , respectively. Since $y_k \in D^*(i_k)$ and so $G(y_k) \in D^*(i_k + 1)$, we may now use Lemma 6.5 to get

$$d(Z_{m,m+1}(P_2(y_k)), P_2(G(y_k))) \leq 2 \cdot r(i_k + 1). \tag{6.33}$$

On the other hand, since $z \in \mathcal{H}_m$ and so $G(z) = Z_{m,m+1}(z)$, our task is to show that $G(y_k) \rightarrow Z_{m,m+1}(z)$. However, $Z_{m,m+1}(z) \in \pi_0$ and the distance between $G(y_k)$ and π_0 tends to zero as $k \rightarrow \infty$. Therefore it is sufficient to show that $P_2(G(y_k)) \rightarrow Z_{m,m+1}(z)$. Using (6.33), we get the estimate:

$$\begin{aligned} d(P_2(G(y_k)), Z_{m,m+1}(z)) &\leq d(P_2(G(y_k)), Z_{m,m+1}(P_2(y_k))) + d(Z_{m,m+1}(P_2(y_k)), Z_{m,m+1}(z)) \\ &\leq 2 \cdot r(i_k + 1) + d(Z_{m,m+1}(P_2(y_k)), Z_{m,m+1}(z)). \end{aligned}$$

For $k \rightarrow \infty$ we have $r(i_k + 1) \rightarrow 0$ and since $P_2(y_k) \rightarrow P_2(z) = z$, just use the continuity of $Z_{m,m+1}$ to see that the right-hand side tends to zero.

Finally, let $z \in \mathcal{H}_m$ be an extremal point of \mathcal{H}_m , say $z \in \mathcal{H}_m \cap \mathcal{H}_{m+1}$. Then we get $G(y_k) \rightarrow G(z)$ by dividing, if necessary, the sequence y_k into two subsequences and then applying the above argument. \square

Lemma 6.7. *The set $\Omega(G)$ of nonwandering points of G equals $A = \{a_i : i \in \mathbb{Z}\} \cup \{a_\infty\}$.*

Proof. Each point of the snake is clearly wandering for G . Further, for $i \in \mathbb{Z}$, infinitely many points of the trajectory x_0, x_1, \dots are P_2 -projected onto a_i . Since this subsequence of the trajectory converges to a_i , we have $a_i \in \Omega(G)$. The point a_∞ is also nonwandering, even for $G|_A$.

Fix $x \in \mathcal{A}_0 \setminus A$. To finish the proof we need to show that x is wandering. Since $x \in \mathcal{H}_k \setminus \{a_k, a_{k+1}\}$ for some $k \in \mathbb{Z}$ and $r(j) \rightarrow 0$ as $j \rightarrow \infty$, there is $n_0 \in \mathbb{N}$ such that the three open $r(n_0)$ -balls centered at the points x , a_k and a_{k+1} are pairwise disjoint and we may also assume that the $r(n_0)$ -disk $B_d(x, r(n_0)) \cap \pi_0$ centered at x lies in the sector \mathcal{S}_k . Hence there is $\varepsilon > 0$ such that the open set $U_0 := (-\varepsilon, \varepsilon) \times (B_d(x, r(n_0)) \cap \pi_0) \subseteq \mathbb{R}^3$ satisfies, for every $m \geq 0$, the following implication:

$$D(m) \cap U_0 \neq \emptyset \Rightarrow D(m) \cap U_0 \subseteq D^{\text{middle}}(m) \setminus D^{\text{front}}(m) \quad (6.34)$$

(see (6.26) and its analogues mentioned below it, e.g. (6.27), (6.28), (6.29)). Note that U_0 is an open set containing x . To prove that x is wandering, fix any $z \in U_0 \cap X$. If $z \in U_0 \cap \text{head}$ then z will never visit U_0 again, because $G(\mathcal{H}_i) = \mathcal{H}_{i+1}$, for every integer i . If $z \in U_0 \cap \text{snake}$, say $z \in U_0 \cap D(m)$ with $x_m, x_{m+1} \in J(i)$, then we claim that again all the points $G(z), G^2(z), \dots$ are outside U_0 . In fact, if $j > 0$ is small enough then $G^j(z) \in D(s)$ with x_s, x_{s+1} either belonging to the same set $J(i)$ or forming the i -th jump, whence $G^j(z) \notin U_0$. Otherwise use (6.34) and Lemma 6.3 to get that $G^j(z) \notin U_0$. It follows that x is a wandering point of G . \square

We embark on the proof that $h^*(G) = \log 2$. Of course, $h^*(G) \geq h^*(T) = \log 2$. By Proposition 2.6(c), when we are looking for IN-tuples of the map G , it is sufficient to consider the set $\Omega(G) = A$. Recall also how we proved that $h^*(T) = \log 2$. First we realized that it was sufficient to prove the conditions (1), (2) and (3) below the formula (5.2), cf. Theorem 5.5.

Lemma 6.8. *For the map G defined above, the following holds.*

- (1) (a_i, a_j) is not an IN-pair for any $i, j \in \mathbb{Z}$ with $|j - i| \geq 2$.
- (2) (a_i, a_∞) is not an IN-pair for any $i \in \mathbb{Z}$.

Proof. (1) Fix $i, j \in \mathbb{Z}$ such that $|j - i| \geq 2$. We may assume that $i > j$. By Theorem 5.5, (a_0, a_{i-j}) is not an IN-pair for (X_1, T) . In view of Proposition 2.6(a) and Proposition 2.7(b) this implies that

$$(a_i, a_j) \text{ is not an IN-pair for } (X_1, T). \quad (6.35)$$

We are going to show that such a pair is neither an IN-pair for (X, G) .

By (6.35), there is $N \in \mathbb{N}$ and a pair of neighborhoods of the points a_i, a_j such that it has no independence set of times of length N in (X_1, T) . Of course, neither smaller neighbourhoods have such an independence set. Therefore one can fix $\varepsilon_i > 0$, $\varepsilon_j > 0$ and $r > 0$ such that the following holds.

- (i) The closed balls (in the plane π_0) $\overline{B}(a_{j-1}, r)$, $\overline{B}(a_j, r)$ and $\overline{B}(a_{j+1}, r)$ are pairwise disjoint,
- (ii) The closed balls $\overline{B}(a_{i-1}, r)$, $\overline{B}(a_i, r)$ and $\overline{B}(a_{i+1}, r)$ are pairwise disjoint,
- (iii) For the open balls $B(a_i, r), B(a_j, r)$ in π_0 we have that, for $U(a_i) = [0, \varepsilon_i) \times B(a_i, r)$ and $U(a_j) = [0, \varepsilon_j) \times B(a_j, r)$,

$$\text{the pair } (U(a_i), U(a_j)) \text{ has no independence set of times of length } N \text{ in } (X_1, T). \quad (6.36)$$

For other restrictions on the choice of $\varepsilon_i, \varepsilon_j$ and r see below. (In (iii), the shape of $U(a_i)$ and $U(a_j)$ is due to the fact that X lives in $[0, 1] \times \pi_0$; to be precise, we should speak on the pair of sets $(U(a_i) \cap X_1, U(a_j) \cap X_1)$, but we hope that no misunderstanding can arise.) We may also assume that all the six balls from (i) and (ii) are pairwise disjoint (except for the case $i = j + 2$ when $B(a_{j+1}, r)$ and $B(a_{i-1}, r)$ coincide) and also disjoint with the closed r -ball centered at any other point from A . Since we have (EP5), (EP10), (EP12) as well as (6.26) and its analogues (6.27), (6.28), (6.29), ..., we may also assume that r is small enough so that the following holds.

- (iv) If $z \in D(t) \cap U(a_i)$ then a_i is the P_2 -projection of the first or the last point of $D(t)$. In the former case $z \notin D^{\text{end}}(t)$ and in the latter case $z \notin D^{\text{front}}(t)$. The same is true for $U(a_j)$.

By (iv), if $D^{\text{front}}(t)$ intersects $U(a_i)$, then $a_i = P_2(x_t)$. Since the point x_{t+1} is closer to π_0 than x_t , it could happen that though some point $z \in D^{\text{front}}(t)$ is in $U(a_i)$, the point x_t itself is outside $U(a_i)$ (though $x_t \in [0, \infty) \times B(a_i, r)$). A similar undesirable effect can occur for $U(a_j)$. However, if $D^{\text{front}}(t)$ intersects

$U(a_i)$ and $x_t \notin U(a_i)$, notice that such t exists only one (if $t' > t$ and again $D^{\text{front}}(t')$ intersects $U(a_i)$ then already $x_{t'} \in U(a_i)$). Similarly for $U(a_j)$. Therefore, by an appropriate choice of $\varepsilon_i, \varepsilon_j$ and r we may assume the following.

(v) If $D^{\text{front}}(t)$ intersects $U(a_i)$ then $x_t \in U(a_i)$. Similarly for $U(a_j)$.

Again, by (iv), if $D^{\text{end}}(t)$ intersects $U(a_i)$, then $a_i = P_2(x_{t+1})$. Since the point x_{t+1} is closer to π_0 than x_t , we then have the following.

(vi) If $D^{\text{end}}(t)$ intersects $U(a_i)$ then $x_{t+1} \in U(a_i)$. Similarly for $U(a_j)$.

Now we are ready to prove that (a_i, a_j) is not an IN-pair for (X, G) . Suppose on the contrary that this is not the case. Then the pair $(U(a_i), U(a_j))$ has arbitrarily long finite independence sets of times in (X, G) . We get a contradiction with (6.35) by proving, for any fixed $N \in \mathbb{N}$, the following claim.

Claim: If the pair of sets $(U(a_i), U(a_j))$ has an independence set of times of length $2N + 4$ in (X, G) , then it has an independence set of times of length N in (X_1, T) .

Proof of Claim: Suppose that $0 \leq l_{-1} < l_0 < \dots < l_{2N+2}$ and $\{l_{-1}, l_0, \dots, l_{2N+2}\}$ is an independence set of times of length $2N + 4$ for $(U(a_i), U(a_j))$ in (X, G) . We are going to show that then $(U(a_i), U(a_j))$ has an independence set of times of length N in (X_1, T) .

Fix $t_0 \in \{i, j\}^{\{1,2,\dots,N\}}$. For any $s \in \{i, j\}^{\{1,2,\dots,N\}}$ we can consider

$$(i, i, s(1), s(2), \dots, s(N), i, i, t_0(1), t_0(2), \dots, t_0(N)) \in \{i, j\}^{\{-1,0,1,2,\dots,2N+2\}} \quad (6.37)$$

and denote

$$\begin{aligned} I(s, t_0) &= (G^{-l_{-1}}U(a_i)) \cap (G^{-l_0}U(a_i)) \cap \left(\bigcap_{k=1}^N G^{-l_k}U(a_{s(k)}) \right) \\ &\quad \cap (G^{-l_{N+1}}U(a_i)) \cap (G^{-l_{N+2}}U(a_i)) \cap \left(\bigcap_{k=1}^N G^{-l_{N+2+k}}U(a_{t_0(k)}) \right). \end{aligned}$$

By the assumption, $I(s, t_0) \neq \emptyset$. In other words,

$$\text{for every } s \text{ there exists } z_{s,t_0} \in X \text{ such that } z_{s,t_0} \in I(s, t_0). \quad (6.38)$$

Notice also that

$$I(s, t_0) \subseteq \text{snake} \quad (6.39)$$

because, apart from the fixed point a_∞ , the dynamics in the head is ‘clock-wise’ and so a point from the head cannot visit $U(a_i)$ (at least) 4-times, as required by (6.37).

Clearly, $\{i, j\}^{\{1,2,\dots,N\}} = \mathfrak{S}_1(t_0) \sqcup \mathfrak{S}_2(t_0)$ where

$$\mathfrak{S}_1(t_0) := \{s \in \{i, j\}^{\{1,2,\dots,N\}} : I(s, t_0) \cap X_1 \neq \emptyset\}$$

and

$$\mathfrak{S}_2(t_0) := \{s \in \{i, j\}^{\{1,2,\dots,N\}} : I(s, t_0) \subseteq \text{snake} \setminus X_1\}.$$

If $s \in \mathfrak{S}_2(t_0)$ and $z_{s,t_0} \in I(s, t_0)$, then there exists a unique \tilde{m} such that $z_{s,t_0} \in D(\tilde{m}) \setminus X_1$. Then, for $m = \tilde{m} + l_{-1}$, using also the definition of $I(s, t_0)$ and the fact that the set $D(m)$ has the first point x_m and the last point x_{m+1} , we get two disjoint possibilities:

- (a) $G^{l_{-1}z_{s,t_0}} \in D(m) \cap U(a_i)$, $a_i = P_2(x_{m+1})$, or
- (b) $G^{l_{-1}z_{s,t_0}} \in D(m) \cap U(a_i)$, $a_i = P_2(x_m)$

(of course, in (a) and (b) the number m depends on z_{s,t_0} and $P_2(G^{l_{-1}z_{s,t_0}}) \in B(a_i, r)$). Consider the sets

$$\mathfrak{S}_{2a}(t_0) := \{s \in \mathfrak{S}_2(t_0) : \forall z_{s,t_0} \in I(s, t_0) \text{ the condition (a) holds}\}$$

and

$$\mathfrak{S}_{2b}(t_0) := \{s \in \mathfrak{S}_2(t_0) : \exists z_{s,t_0} \in I(s, t_0) \text{ such that the condition (b) holds}\}.$$

Let $s \in \mathfrak{S}_{2a}(t_0)$ and $z_{s,t_0} \in I(s, t_0)$. In view of the condition (a) and the definition of $I(s, t_0)$, we have $G^{l_{N+1}z_{s,t_0}} \in D(m + l_{N+1} - l_{-1}) \cap U(a_i)$ for some m . There are two disjoint possibilities:

- (c) $G^{l_{N+1}} z_{s,t_0} \in D^{\text{end}}(m + l_{N+1} - l_{-1}) \cap U(a_i)$, or
 (d) $G^{l_{N+1}} z_{s,t_0} \in (D(m + l_{N+1} - l_{-1}) \setminus D^{\text{end}}(m + l_{N+1} - l_{-1})) \cap U(a_i)$.

Consider the sets

$$\mathfrak{S}_{2ac}(t_0) := \{s \in \mathfrak{S}_{2a}(t_0) : \forall z_{s,t_0} \in I(s, t_0) \text{ the condition (c) holds}\}$$

and

$$\mathfrak{S}_{2ad}(t_0) := \{s \in \mathfrak{S}_{2a}(t_0) : \exists z_{s,t_0} \in I(s, t_0) \text{ such that the condition (d) holds}\}.$$

Clearly, for every $t_0 \in \{i, j\}^{\{1,2,\dots,N\}}$ we have

$$\{i, j\}^{\{1,2,\dots,N\}} = \mathfrak{S}_1(t_0) \sqcup \mathfrak{S}_{2ac}(t_0) \sqcup \mathfrak{S}_{2ad}(t_0) \sqcup \mathfrak{S}_{2b}(t_0).$$

We consider four cases.

Case 1: There exists t_0 such that $\{i, j\}^{\{1,2,\dots,N\}} = \mathfrak{S}_1(t_0)$.

In this case $\{l_1, \dots, l_N\}$ is an independence set of times of length N for $(U(a_i), U(a_j))$ in (X_1, T) and we are done.

Case 2: There exists t_0 such that $\{i, j\}^{\{1,2,\dots,N\}} = \mathfrak{S}_1(t_0) \sqcup \mathfrak{S}_{2b}(t_0)$ with $\mathfrak{S}_{2b}(t_0) \neq \emptyset$.

Fix such t_0 . Let $s \in \mathfrak{S}_{2b}(t_0)$. Choose $z_{s,t_0} \in I(s, t_0)$ such that (b) holds for some m . For such s and z_{s,t_0} we get, by (iv), that $G^{l-1} z_{s,t_0} \in D^{\text{front}}(m) \cup D^{\text{middle}}(m)$. Using Lemma 6.3,

$$G^{l_0} z_{s,t_0} = G^{l_0-l-1} G^{l-1} z_{s,t_0} \in D^{\text{front}}(m + l_0 - l_{-1}).$$

Then, by Corollary 6.4, the points $G^{l_0} z_{s,t_0}$ and $x_{m+l_0-l_{-1}}$ travel together through the front parts, i.e. for every $p \geq 0$ both $G^p(G^{l_0} z_{s,t_0})$ and $G^p(x_{m+l_0-l_{-1}})$ belong to $D^{\text{front}}(m + l_0 - l_{-1} + p)$. In particular,

$$G^{l_k} z_{s,t_0} = G^{l_k-l_0} G^{l_0} z_{s,t_0} \in D^{\text{front}}(m + l_k - l_{-1}), \quad k = 1, \dots, N.$$

Since $z_{s,t_0} \in I(s, t_0)$, we also have $G^{l_k} z_{s,t_0} \in U(a_{s(k)})$, $k = 1, \dots, N$. Thus, $G^{l_k} z_{s,t_0}$ is a point of $D^{\text{front}}(m + l_k - l_{-1})$ belonging to $U(a_{s(k)})$ and then, by (v),

$$x_{m+l_k-l_{-1}} \in U(a_{s(k)}), \quad k = 1, \dots, N.$$

Then

$$G^{l_k-l_0} x_{m+l_0-l_{-1}} = x_{m+l_k-l_{-1}} \in U(a_{s(k)}), \quad k = 1, \dots, N, \quad (6.40)$$

whence

$$X_1 \cap \bigcap_{k=1}^N G^{-(l_k-l_0)} U(a_{s(k)}) \neq \emptyset. \quad (6.41)$$

We have shown that (6.41) holds for all $s \in \mathfrak{S}_{2b}(t_0)$. However, if $s \in \mathfrak{S}_1(t_0)$ then (6.41) is also true, because by definition of $\mathfrak{S}_1(t_0)$ there is a point $z_{s,t_0} \in I(s, t_0) \cap X_1$ and then the point $G^{l_0}(z_{s,t_0})$ belongs both to the G -invariant set X_1 and to the set $\bigcap_{k=1}^N G^{-(l_k-l_0)} U(a_{s(k)})$. Thus we have (6.41) for all $s \in \mathfrak{S}_1(t_0) \sqcup \mathfrak{S}_{2b}(t_0) = \{i, j\}^{\{1,2,\dots,N\}}$. It follows that $\{l_1 - l_0, \dots, l_N - l_0\}$ is an independence set of times of length N for $(U(a_i), U(a_j))$ in (X_1, T) and so we are done also in this case.

Case 3: There exists t_0 such that $\{i, j\}^{\{1,2,\dots,N\}} = \mathfrak{S}_1(t_0) \sqcup \mathfrak{S}_{2ac}(t_0) \sqcup \mathfrak{S}_{2b}(t_0)$ with $\mathfrak{S}_{2ac}(t_0) \neq \emptyset$.

Fix such t_0 . Let $s \in \mathfrak{S}_{2ac}(t_0)$. By the condition (a) and by (iv), $G^{l-1} z_{s,t_0} \in (D(m) \setminus D^{\text{front}}(m)) \cap U(a_i)$ for some m . Hence $G^{l-1} z_{s,t_0} \in (D^{\text{middle}}(m) \cup D^{\text{end}}(m)) \cap U(a_i)$. On the other hand, by condition (c) we have $G^{l_{N+1}} z_{s,t_0} \in D^{\text{end}}(m + l_{N+1} - l_{-1}) \cap U(a_i)$. Then by Lemma 6.2 and Lemma 6.3,

$$G^{l_k} z_{s,t_0} \in D^{\text{end}}(m + l_k - l_{-1}), \quad k = -1, 0, 1, 2, \dots, N.$$

Further, since $z_{s,t_0} \in I(s, t_0)$, we have

$$G^{l_k-l-1} G^{l-1} z_{s,t_0} = G^{l_k} z_{s,t_0} \in U(a_{s(k)}), \quad k = 1, 2, \dots, N.$$

Thus, the point $G^{l-1} z_{s,t_0} \in D^{\text{end}}(m)$ has the G^{l_k-l-1} -image (for $k = 1, 2, \dots, N$) both in $D^{\text{end}}(m + l_k - l_{-1})$ and in $U(a_{s(k)})$. By (vi), $x_{m+l_k-l_{-1}+1} \in U(a_{s(k)})$. Hence

$$G^{l_k-l-1} x_{m+1} = x_{m+l_k-l_{-1}+1} \in U(a_{s(k)}), \quad k = 1, 2, \dots, N.$$

It follows that

$$X_1 \cap \bigcap_{k=1}^N G^{-(l_k - l_{-1})} U(a_{s(k)}) \neq \emptyset. \quad (6.42)$$

Let us summarize. For any $s \in \{i, j\}^{\{1, 2, \dots, N\}}$ there are the following 3 possibilities.

- If $s \in \mathfrak{S}_{2ac}(t_0)$ then, as we have just shown, (6.42) holds.
- If $s \in \mathfrak{S}_1(t_0)$ then there is $z_{s, t_0} \in I(s, t_0) \cap X_1$. Then $G^{l_{-1}} z_{s, t_0} \in X_1$ and, by the definition of I_{s, t_0} , $G^{l_k - l_{-1}}(G^{l_{-1}} z_{s, t_0}) = G^{l_k}(z_{s, t_0}) \in U(a_{s(k)})$ for $k = 1, \dots, N$. Hence, again we have (6.42).
- If $s \in \mathfrak{S}_{2b}(t_0)$ then, as shown in (6.40) in Case 2, for $k = 1, \dots, N$ we have $G^{l_k - l_0} x_{m+l_0-l_{-1}} \in U(a_{s(k)})$. Since $G^{l_k - l_0} x_{m+l_0-l_{-1}} = G^{l_k - l_0}(G^{l_0 - l_{-1}}(x_m)) = G^{l_k - l_{-1}}(x_m)$, we get (6.42) again.

Since (6.42) holds for every $s \in \{i, j\}^{\{1, 2, \dots, N\}}$, $\{l_1 - l_{-1}, \dots, l_N - l_{-1}\}$ is an independence set of times of length N for $(U(a_i), U(a_j))$ in (X_1, T) . The proof of Claim in Case 3 is finished.

It remains to consider the last case, which is the negation of the logical disjunction of the first three cases. It can be formulated as follows.

Case 4: For every $t_0 \in \{i, j\}^{\{1, 2, \dots, N\}}$ there exists $s_0 \in \{i, j\}^{\{1, 2, \dots, N\}}$ such that $s_0 \in \mathfrak{S}_{2ad}(t_0)$.

Fix any t_0 and choose $s_0 \in \mathfrak{S}_{2ad}(t_0)$. Then there exists z_{s_0, t_0} such that the following holds:

- (4₁) $z_{s_0, t_0} \in I(s_0, t_0)$.
- (4₂) There exists $m \in \mathbb{N}$ with $P_2(x_{m+1}) = a_i$ such that $G^{l_{-1}} z_{s_0, t_0} \in D(m) \cap U(a_i)$. Moreover, by (iv), $G^{l_{-1}} z_{s_0, t_0} \notin D^{\text{front}}(m)$.
- (4₃) $G^{l_{N+1}} z_{s_0, t_0} \in (D(m + l_{N+1} - l_{-1}) \setminus D^{\text{end}}(m + l_{N+1} - l_{-1})) \cap U(a_i)$.

By (4₃),

$$G^{l_{N+1}} z_{s_0, t_0} \in (D^{\text{front}}(m + l_{N+1} - l_{-1}) \cup D^{\text{middle}}(m + l_{N+1} - l_{-1})) \cap U(a_i)$$

and so $G^{l_{N+2}} z_{s_0, t_0} \in D(m + l_{N+2} - l_{-1}) \cap U(a_i)$. Since $x_{m+l_{N+1}-l_{-1}}$ and $x_{m+l_{N+2}-l_{-1}}$ are not in the same jump level, by Lemma 6.3 we in fact have

$$G^{l_{N+2}} z_{s_0, t_0} \in D^{\text{front}}(m + l_{N+2} - l_{-1}) \cap U(a_i). \quad (6.43)$$

Hence, by Corollary 6.4, the points $G^{l_{N+2}} z_{s_0, t_0}$ and $x_{m+l_{N+2}-l_{-1}}$ travel together through the front parts. In particular,

$$G^{l_{N+2+k}} z_{s_0, t_0} = G^{l_{N+2+k} - l_{N+2}}(G^{l_{N+2}} z_{s_0, t_0}) \in D^{\text{front}}(m + l_{N+2+k} - l_{-1}), \quad k = 1, 2, \dots, N.$$

Further, by (4₁) and the definition of $I(s_0, t_0)$ we get

$$G^{l_{N+2+k}} z_{s_0, t_0} \in U(a_{t_0(k)}), \quad k = 1, 2, \dots, N.$$

By the last two inclusions, (v) gives that $x_{m+l_{N+2+k}-l_{-1}} \in U(a_{t_0(k)})$, $k = 1, 2, \dots, N$. Equivalently,

$$G^{l_{N+2+k} - l_{N+2}} x_{m+l_{N+2}-l_{-1}} \in U(a_{t_0(k)}), \quad k = 1, 2, \dots, N$$

and so

$$X_1 \cap \bigcap_{k=1}^N G^{-(l_{N+2+k} - l_{N+2})} U(a_{t_0(k)}) \neq \emptyset.$$

Since $t_0 \in \{i, j\}^{\{1, 2, \dots, N\}}$ was arbitrary, $\{l_{N+3} - l_{N+2}, l_{N+4} - l_{N+2}, \dots, l_{2N+2} - l_{N+2}\}$ is an independence set of times of length N for $(U(a_i), U(a_j))$ in (X_1, T) .

(2) The proof is very similar to that of (1). For completeness, we give an outline of it, emphasizing the differences when compared with the proof of (1). To make the comparison easier, we will use an analogous notation as in (1). Now we will of course have $U(a_\infty)$ instead of $U(a_j)$. The main difference is that (iv) will be replaced by (iv'_a)-(iv'_d).

By Theorem 5.5, (a_0, a_∞) is not an IN-pair for (X_1, T) . In view of Proposition 2.6(a) and Proposition 2.7(b) this implies that

$$(a_i, a_\infty) \text{ is not an IN-pair for } (X_1, T). \quad (6.44)$$

We are going to show that such a pair is neither an IN-pair for (X, G) .

By (6.44), there is $N \in \mathbb{N}$ and a pair of neighborhoods of the points a_i, a_∞ such that it has no independence set of times of length N in (X_1, T) . Therefore one can fix $\varepsilon_i > 0, \varepsilon_\infty > 0$ and $r > 0$ such that the following holds.

- (i') The closed balls (in the plane π_0) $\overline{B}(a_{i-1}, r), \overline{B}(a_i, r)$ and $\overline{B}(a_{i+1}, r)$ are pairwise disjoint (and also disjoint with the closed r -ball centered at any other point $a_j \in A$).
- (ii') The closed ball $\overline{B}(a_\infty, r)$ is disjoint with the three closed balls in (i') and there exists $K \in \mathbb{N}$ such that $a_j \in B(a_\infty, r)$ if and only is $|j| \geq K$.
- (iii'_a) For the open balls $B(a_i, r), B(a_\infty, r)$ in π_0 we have that, for $U(a_i) = [0, \varepsilon_i) \times B(a_i, r)$ and $V(a_\infty) = [0, \varepsilon_\infty) \times B(a_\infty, r)$,

$$\text{the pair } (U(a_i), V(a_\infty)) \text{ has no independence set of times of length } N \text{ in } (X_1, T). \quad (6.45)$$

For other restrictions on the choice of $\varepsilon_i, \varepsilon_\infty$ and r see below.

Recall that, by our construction, all the jumps are ‘almost horizontal’ and the jump numbers corresponding to the starting points of the jumps tend to infinity very fast. Therefore we may assume that r is chosen in such a way that K is not a jump number, i.e. no jump starts or ends in a point whose P_2 -projection is a_K or a_{-K} , respectively. Again, taking into account that all jumps are ‘almost horizontal’, one can see that by shrinking $B(a_\infty, r)$ appropriately we get an open neighborhood (not necessarily a ball) $\tilde{B}(a_\infty) \subseteq B(a_\infty, r)$ of a_∞ such that still $a_j \in \tilde{B}(a_\infty)$ if and only is $|j| \geq K$ and, moreover,

$$U(a_\infty) := [0, \varepsilon_\infty) \times \tilde{B}(a_\infty) \subseteq V(a_\infty)$$

has the following property.

- (iii'_b) If $D(t)$ is placed along a jump and $D(t) \cap U(a_\infty) \neq \emptyset$, then $D(t) \subseteq U(a_\infty)$.

Since $U(a_\infty) \subseteq V(a_\infty)$, it is clear that

$$\text{the pair } (U(a_i), U(a_\infty)) \text{ has no independence set of times of length } N \text{ in } (X_1, T). \quad (6.46)$$

Just as we do in (1), we may also assume that r, ε_∞ and $U(a_\infty)$ are chosen properly so that the following holds.

- (iv'_a) If $z \in D(t) \cap U(a_i)$ then a_i is the P_2 -projection of the first or the last point of $D(t)$. In the former case $z \notin D^{\text{end}}(t)$ and in the latter case $z \notin D^{\text{front}}(t)$.
- (iv'_b) If $z \in D(t) \cap U(a_\infty)$ and $P_2(x_t) = a_{-K}$, then $z \notin D^{\text{end}}(t)$.
- (iv'_c) If $z \in D(t) \cap U(a_\infty)$ and $P_2(x_{t+1}) = a_K$, then $z \notin D^{\text{front}}(t)$.
- (iv'_d) If $z \in D(t) \cap U(a_\infty)$ and $P_2(x_{t+1}) = a_j$ where $j > K$ or $j \leq -K$, then $D(t) \subseteq U(a_\infty)$.

By (iv'_a), if $D^{\text{front}}(t)$ intersects $U(a_i)$, then $a_i = P_2(x_t)$. Since the point x_{t+1} is closer to π_0 than x_t , it could happen that the point x_t itself is outside $U(a_i)$. However, as in (1), we may assume the following.

- (v'_a) If $D^{\text{front}}(t)$ intersects $U(a_i)$ then $x_t \in U(a_i)$.

Similarly, we can claim the following.

- (v'_b) If $D^{\text{front}}(t)$ intersects $U(a_\infty)$ then $x_t \in U(a_\infty)$.

Indeed, if $D(t)$ is placed along a jump, then this follows from (iii')(b). Now suppose that $D(t)$ is not placed along a jump, put $P_2(x_{t+1}) = a_j$ and consider all the possible cases as follows. If $j > K$ or $j \leq -K$, then $x_t \in U(a_\infty)$ by (iv')(d). If $j = -(K-1)$, we have $P_2(x_t) = a_{-K} \in \tilde{B}(a_\infty)$ and then $x_t \in U(a_\infty)$ due to a slight change of ε_∞ if necessary (see the corresponding discussion in (1), just above (v)). The case $j = K$ is impossible because our assumption that $D^{\text{front}}(t)$ intersects $U(a_\infty)$ contradicts (iv')(c). It remains the case $-(K-1) < j < K$ which implies that both j and $j-1$ have absolute values less than K and so both $a_j, a_{j-1} \notin \tilde{B}(a_\infty)$, whence $x_{t+1}, x_t \notin U(a_\infty)$ and so $D(t) \cap U(a_\infty) = \emptyset$, a contradiction.

By (iv'_a), if $D^{\text{end}}(t)$ intersects $U(a_i)$, then $a_i = P_2(x_{t+1})$. Since the point x_{t+1} is closer to π_0 than x_t , we have the following.

- (vi'_a) If $D^{\text{end}}(t)$ intersects $U(a_i)$ then $x_{t+1} \in U(a_i)$.

Similarly, we can claim the following.

(vi'_b) If $D^{\text{end}}(t)$ intersects $U(a_\infty)$ then $x_{t+1} \in U(a_\infty)$.

Indeed, if $D(t)$ is placed along a jump, then this follows from (iii')(b). Now suppose that $D(t)$ is not placed along a jump, put $P_2(x_{t+1}) = a_j$ and consider all the possible cases as follows. If $j > K$ or $j \leq -K$, then $x_{t+1} \in U(a_\infty)$ by (iv')(d). If $j = -(K-1)$, we have $P_2(x_t) = a_{-K}$ and (iv')(b) shows that this case is impossible. If $j = K$, then $P_2(x_{t+1}) = a_K \in \tilde{B}(a_\infty)$ and since x_{t+1} is closer to π_0 than x_t (and $D^{\text{end}}(t)$ intersects $U(a_\infty)$), this implies $x_{t+1} \in U(a_\infty)$. Finally, if $-(K-1) < j < K$ then both j and $j-1$ have absolute values less than K . Thus both $a_j, a_{j-1} \notin \tilde{B}(a_\infty)$, whence $x_{t+1}, x_t \notin U(a_\infty)$ and so $D(t) \cap U(a_\infty) = \emptyset$, a contradiction.

Now we are ready to prove that (a_i, a_∞) is not an IN-pair for (X, G) . Suppose on the contrary that this is not the case. Then the pair $(U(a_i), U(a_\infty))$ has arbitrarily long finite independence sets of times in (X, G) . We get a contradiction with (6.44) by proving, for any fixed $N \in \mathbb{N}$, the following claim.

Claim': If the pair of sets $(U(a_i), U(a_\infty))$ has an independence set of times of length $2N+4$ in (X, G) , then it has an independence set of times of length N in (X_1, T) .

Proof of Claim': Suppose that $0 \leq l_{-1} < l_0 < \dots < l_{2N+2}$ and $\{l_{-1}, l_0, \dots, l_{2N+2}\}$ is an independence set of times of length $2N+4$ for $(U(a_i), U(a_\infty))$ in (X, G) . We are going to show that then $(U(a_i), U(a_\infty))$ has an independence set of times of length N in (X_1, T) .

Fix $t_0 \in \{i, \infty\}^{\{1,2,\dots,N\}}$. For any $s \in \{i, \infty\}^{\{1,2,\dots,N\}}$ we can consider

$$(i, i, s(1), s(2), \dots, s(N), i, i, t_0(1), t_0(2), \dots, t_0(N)) \in \{i, \infty\}^{\{-1,0,1,2,\dots,2N+2\}} \quad (6.47)$$

and also denote

$$\begin{aligned} I(s, t_0) &= (G^{-l_{-1}}U(a_i)) \cap (G^{-l_0}U(a_i)) \cap \left(\bigcap_{k=1}^N G^{-l_k}U(a_{s(k)}) \right) \\ &\quad \cap (G^{-l_{N+1}}U(a_i)) \cap (G^{-l_{N+2}}U(a_i)) \cap \left(\bigcap_{k=1}^N G^{-l_{N+2+k}}U(a_{t_0(k)}) \right). \end{aligned}$$

By the assumption,

$$\text{for every } s \text{ there exists } z_{s,t_0} \in X \text{ such that } z_{s,t_0} \in I(s, t_0) \quad (6.48)$$

and for the same reason as in (1) we have

$$I(s, t_0) \subseteq \text{snake}. \quad (6.49)$$

Clearly, $\{i, \infty\}^{\{1,2,\dots,N\}} = \mathfrak{S}_1(t_0) \sqcup \mathfrak{S}_2(t_0)$ where

$$\mathfrak{S}_1(t_0) := \{s \in \{i, \infty\}^{\{1,2,\dots,N\}} : I(s, t_0) \cap X_1 \neq \emptyset\}$$

and

$$\mathfrak{S}_2(t_0) := \{s \in \{i, \infty\}^{\{1,2,\dots,N\}} : I(s, t_0) \subseteq \text{snake} \setminus X_1\}.$$

We further define \tilde{m} , m and also $\mathfrak{S}_{2a}(t_0)$, $\mathfrak{S}_{2b}(t_0)$ and $\mathfrak{S}_{2ac}(t_0)$, $\mathfrak{S}_{2ad}(t_0)$ as in (1). Then, for every $t_0 \in \{i, \infty\}^{\{1,2,\dots,N\}}$ we have

$$\{i, \infty\}^{\{1,2,\dots,N\}} = \mathfrak{S}_1(t_0) \sqcup \mathfrak{S}_{2ac}(t_0) \sqcup \mathfrak{S}_{2ad}(t_0) \sqcup \mathfrak{S}_{2b}(t_0).$$

To finish the proof, it is sufficient to consider exactly those four cases as in (1). In each of them, the proof is the same as in the corresponding case in (1). Of course, instead of $\{i, j\}^{\{1,2,\dots,N\}}$ and $(U(a_i), U(a_j))$ one has to write $\{i, \infty\}^{\{1,2,\dots,N\}}$ and $(U(a_i), U(a_\infty))$, respectively. The list of other differences is:

- in Case 2, instead of (iv) use (iv'_a) and instead of (v) use (v'_a) and (v'_b),
- in Case 3, instead of (iv) use (iv'_a) and instead of (vi) use (vi'_a) and (vi'_b),
- in Case 4, instead of (iv) use (iv'_a) and instead of (v) use (v'_a).

□

Recall that in Section 4 dealing with the case $S(X) = \{0, \infty\}$, namely above Lemma 4.4, we introduced the sets $\langle\langle a, b \rangle\rangle$, $\langle\langle \mathcal{K}_0, b \rangle\rangle$ and $\langle\langle \mathcal{K}_0, b \rangle\rangle$. The sets of the form $\langle\langle \mathcal{K}_0, f_i^m \rangle\rangle$ were said to be sub-snakes. Now, when we are working with the case $S(X) = \{0, \log 2\}$, the head \mathcal{K}_0 is replaced by the head \mathcal{A}_0 and the snake is homeomorphic with the snake from Section 4. Therefore we can again use these notations, with \mathcal{K}_0 replaced by \mathcal{A}_0 .

With the help of the above Lemma 6.8, we get the following analogue of Lemma 4.25.

Lemma 6.9. *For the map $G : X \rightarrow X$ defined above, in Subsection 6.3, as a continuous extension of the map $T : X_1 \rightarrow X_1$, the following properties hold.*

- (a) $h^*(G) = \log 2$.
- (b) For every $r \in \mathbb{N}$, the set $S_r^{\text{br}} = \langle\langle \mathcal{A}_0, x_r \rangle\rangle$ is G -invariant and $h^*(G|_{S_r^{\text{br}}}) = \log 2$.
- (c) For every $m \in \mathbb{N}$, $G(D_m^*) = D_{m+1}^*$.

Proof. Trivially, $h^*(G) \geq h^*(T) = \log 2$. By Proposition 2.6(c), the elements of IN-tuples lie in $\Omega(G) = A$ and it follows from Lemma 6.8 that there is no IN-triple for G . Hence (a). By the construction of G we obviously have (c) and also the fact that $S_r^{\text{br}} = \langle\langle \mathcal{A}_0, x_r \rangle\rangle$ is G -invariant. Since $h^*(G) = h^*(T) = \log 2$ and clearly also $h^*(T|_{S_r^{\text{br}} \cap X_1}) = \log 2$, we get $h^*(G|_{S_r^{\text{br}}}) = \log 2$, which finishes the proof of (b). \square

6.6. Properties of continuous selfmaps of X and proof that $S(X) = \{0, \log 2\}$. As in Section 4, our continuum X is the union of bricks (now with the point a_∞ added). The snake is homeomorphic to that from Section 4, but the heads are substantially different. In Section 4 the head was just one brick, namely the Cook continuum \mathcal{K}_0 . Now the head \mathcal{A}_0 is the necklace of homeomorphic Cook continua \mathcal{H}_k , together with the point a_∞ . The list of all bricks is: H_k ($k \in \mathbb{Z}$), $\mathcal{K}_1^0, \mathcal{K}_2^0, \dots, \mathcal{K}_1^1, \mathcal{K}_2^1, \dots, \dots$. While the construction of X and the proofs of the properties of G were now much more complicated than in the case $S(X) = \{0, \infty\}$, fortunately the analogues of the results from Subsection 4.4 on properties of continuous selfmaps of X are true, with almost the same proofs (for the results involving only the snake this is trivial, but many of the results involve explicitly or implicitly also the head, i.e. the influence of the head on their validity is not apriori excluded). There are only few differences due to the fact that \mathcal{K}_0 is replaced by \mathcal{A}_0 . We are going to describe them.

Standing notation for the rest of Section 6: In the rest of the section, X denotes the space X constructed above in (6.25) and F denotes a continuous map $X \rightarrow X$.

The analogue of Lemma 4.5 is clearly true, with the continuum \mathcal{K}_0 in the parts (b) and (c) replaced by any of the continua \mathcal{H}_k . What is really important is that the following complete analogue of Lemma 4.6 holds.

Lemma 6.10. *If B is a brick then $F(B)$ is either a singleton or a brick homeomorphic to B .*

Proof. The proof is basically the same as the proof of Lemma 4.6, with one exception. The Case 1 is now more complicated, because the head is more complicated. So, let B be a brick, $F|_B = G$ and $G(B)$ be a non-degenerate sub-continuum of the head. We distinguish two possibilities.

If $G(B) \subseteq \mathcal{H}_i$ for some $i \in \mathbb{Z}$, we have a brick B (in the snake or in the head) mapped onto a non-degenerate continuum $G(B)$ in \mathcal{H}_i . Due to the just discussed analogue of Lemma 4.5(b), B is not a brick in the snake. So, $B = \mathcal{H}_j$ for some $j \in \mathbb{Z}$ and since \mathcal{H}_j and \mathcal{H}_i are copies of the same Cook continuum, we necessarily have $G(B) = \mathcal{H}_i$ and we are done.

Now assume that

$$G(B) \subseteq \text{head is not a subset of any of the bricks } \mathcal{H}_i. \quad (6.50)$$

We are going to show that this assumption leads to a contradiction.

Since we assume that $G(B)$ is non-degenerate, it intersects the interior of a brick in the head (here we speak on the interiors in the topology of the head, so the interior \mathcal{H}_i° of \mathcal{H}_i is obtained from \mathcal{H}_i by removing the two extremal points). Fix $k \in \mathbb{Z}$ such that

$$G(B) \cap \mathcal{H}_k^\circ \text{ contains a point } a.$$

By (6.50), there is $l \neq k$ such that also $G(B) \cap \mathcal{H}_l^\circ \neq \emptyset$. Then, since $G(B)$ is connected, it necessarily contains at least one extremal point of \mathcal{H}_k . The set $U := G^{-1}(\mathcal{H}_k^\circ)$ is an open subset of B containing a point a^* with $G(a^*) = a$. Since $G(B)$ contains an extremal point of \mathcal{H}_k and $G(U)$ does not, U is a proper subset of B . Let K be the component of \overline{U} containing a^* . Since $K \subseteq \overline{U}$, we have $G(K) \subseteq \mathcal{H}_k$. By the Boundary Bumping Theorem, see Theorem 2.10, K contains a point from the boundary of U and since this point does not belong to the open set U , its G -image is necessarily an extremal point of \mathcal{H}_k . Thus $K \subseteq B$ and $G(K) \subseteq \mathcal{H}_k$ are non-degenerate continua, the latter one containing both a and an extremal point of \mathcal{H}_k . Now distinguish two cases.

If B is a brick in the snake then, by our construction of bricks, K and $G(K)$ are copies of disjoint non-degenerate subcontinua of one planar Cook continuum, which gives a contradiction.

If $B = \mathcal{H}_s$ for some $s \in \mathbb{Z}$, we get a contradiction as follows. First realize that $G(B)$ contains also an extremal point of \mathcal{H}_k . This is because, by the argument above, B contains a non-degenerate continuum K such that $G(K) \subseteq \mathcal{H}_k$ contains both a non-extremal point and an extremal point of \mathcal{H}_k . By (6.4), the sets $B = \mathcal{H}_s$ and \mathcal{H}_k are copies, even under similitudes, of the same Cook continuum \mathcal{H}_0 (recall also that these similitudes preserve extremal points). Since \mathcal{H}_0 is Cook, one non-degenerate sub-continuum of \mathcal{H}_0 is a continuous image of another non-degenerate sub-continuum of \mathcal{H}_0 if and only if the two sub-continua coincide. Therefore the fact that $G(K) \subseteq \mathcal{H}_k$ contains an extremal point of \mathcal{H}_k implies that also $K \subseteq B = \mathcal{H}_s$ contains an extremal point of B .

We have shown that if $G(B)$ intersects \mathcal{H}_k° (and we know that in our situation there are at least two such indices k) then at least one extremal point of B is mapped by G to an extremal point of \mathcal{H}_k . As a consequence we get that $G(B)$ cannot intersect the interiors of three pairwise disjoint continua \mathcal{H}_i , because B has only two extremal points. Hence there exists $m \in \mathbb{Z}$ such that $G(B) \cap \mathcal{H}_m^\circ = \emptyset$. Fix again $k \in \mathbb{Z}$ with $G(B) \cap \mathcal{H}_k^\circ \neq \emptyset$ and denote by r the monotone retract $\mathcal{A}_0 \setminus \mathcal{H}_m^\circ \rightarrow \mathcal{H}_k$ sending all the points from $(\mathcal{A}_0 \setminus \mathcal{H}_m^\circ) \setminus \mathcal{H}_k$ to the extremal points of \mathcal{H}_k . Then $\Phi := r \circ G : B \rightarrow \mathcal{H}_k$ is continuous and non-constant (because $G(B)$ contains a non-degenerate continuum $G(K)$ in \mathcal{H}_k , as discussed above). Hence Φ is the unique homeomorphism from $B = \mathcal{H}_s$ onto \mathcal{H}_k , in fact $\Phi = Z_k \circ Z_s^{-1}$, see (6.4). It follows that for $B^\circ = \mathcal{H}_s^\circ$ we have $\Phi(B^\circ) = \mathcal{H}_k^\circ$ and so obviously $G(B^\circ) = \mathcal{H}_k^\circ$, even $\Phi|_{B^\circ} = G|_{B^\circ}$. Then also $\Phi|_B = G|_B$ and so $G(B) = \mathcal{H}_k$, a contradiction with (6.50). \square

Due to this lemma, also all the other results from Subsection 4.4 basically work for our candidate X for the equality $S(X) = \{0, \log 2\}$. It is straightforward to check that the following claims work for our space X with the same proofs, up to easy modifications, as in Section 4: Corollary 4.7, Corollary 4.8, Corollary 4.9, Lemma 4.10 (with a small modification in the proof of (a) and with \mathcal{A}_0 instead of \mathcal{X}_0 in (f)), Lemma 4.11 (just remember that now $m = 0, 1, \dots$ and not $m = 1, 2, \dots$, so in (P5) we have now $m \geq 1$). Besides Lemma 6.10, next crucial lemma is the following analogue of Lemma 4.12.

Lemma 6.11. (a) *If the snake is not F -invariant then F is constant.*
 (b) *If the set Σ is not F -invariant then F is constant.*
 (c) *If $F(\mathcal{A}_0) = \{z_0\}$ for some $z_0 \in \mathcal{A}_0$, then $F(X) = \{z_0\}$ and so F is constant.*

Proof. The proof is almost the same as that of Lemma 4.12 and so we comment only the differences. First, where the proof of Lemma 4.12 refers to some lemmas from Subsection 4.4, now we use the discussed analogues of them. In particular, the proof of (c) does not require any other modifications.

At the very end of the proof of (a), now it is not true that X is the closure of the snake. However, the whole set $A = \{a_i : i \in \mathbb{Z}\} \cup \{a_\infty\}$ is in the closure of the snake. Therefore, once we know that the snake is mapped by F to the point $z_0 \in \mathcal{A}_0$, we also have $F(A) = \{z_0\}$. In particular, every brick \mathcal{H}_k in the head contains at least two points mapped by F to z_0 and so, by the analogue of Lemma 4.10(c), the whole \mathcal{H}_k is mapped to z_0 . Hence $F(X) = \{z_0\}$.

Exactly the same argument as above, can be used at the end of the proof of (b) to get $F(X) = \{z\}$. \square

Further, the analogue of Lemma 4.13 works with the same proof. Moreover, we also have Lemma 4.14.

Also the results from Subsection 4.5 can be carried over to our space X . Since now the head is \mathcal{A}_0 , in (4.11) we replace \mathcal{K}_0 by \mathcal{A}_0 . Then Lemmas 4.16 and 4.17 obviously still work. In particular, we can consider the induced function $\widehat{F}: \widehat{X} \rightarrow \widehat{X}$ defined by $\widehat{F}(A) = B$ when $F(A) \subseteq B$ for $A, B \in \widehat{X}$.

Recall that just after the proof of Lemma 4.17 we remark that $\widehat{F}(A) = B$ means that $F(A)$ is a singleton in B or coincides with B . This is still true, though the case $A = B = \mathcal{A}_0$ needs an explanation. The following lemma shows slightly more.

Lemma 6.12. *Let $\varphi: \mathcal{A}_0 \rightarrow \mathcal{A}_0$ is a continuous map. Then there are the following possibilities.*

- (1) *If $\varphi(a_\infty) \in \mathcal{H}_k^\circ$ for some $k \in \mathbb{Z}$, then φ is constant.*
- (2) *If $\varphi(a_\infty) = a_i$ for some $i \in \mathbb{Z}$, then φ is constant.*
- (3) *If $\varphi(a_\infty) = a_\infty$ then φ is either constant or surjective.*

So, φ is either constant or surjective and the space \mathcal{A}_0 has fixed point property.

Proof. (1) Put $z = \varphi(a_\infty) \in \mathcal{H}_k^\circ$. By continuity, the whole bricks \mathcal{H}_i with $|i|$ very large are also mapped into \mathcal{H}_k° , and so, being copies of the Cook continuum \mathcal{H}_k , they are necessarily mapped to the point z . Then, for analogous reasons, also the remaining finitely many bricks are mapped to z .

(2) The bricks \mathcal{H}_i with $|i|$ very large are mapped to a small neighbourhood of a_i which does not contain any whole brick. Hence they are mapped to a_i . The finitely many other bricks of \mathcal{A}_0 form a continuum whose two ‘endpoints’ are mapped to a_i . Each of those bricks is mapped either to a point or onto a brick with sending the first and the last point onto the first and the last point, respectively. It follows that the only possibility is that they all are mapped to a_i .

(3) Let $\varphi(a_\infty) = a_\infty$. Again, each of the bricks is mapped either to a point or onto a brick, with sending the first and the last point onto the first and the last point, respectively. This rule implies that if φ is not constant, then $\varphi(\mathcal{A}_0)$ covers all the bricks in \mathcal{A}_0 . \square

Let us also remark the difference: If $\varphi(\mathcal{K}_0) = \mathcal{K}_0$, then all the points in \mathcal{K}_0 are fixed. Now, with \mathcal{K}_0 replaced by \mathcal{A}_0 this is not automatically the case, in general we have only $\text{Fix}(\varphi) \subseteq \mathcal{A}_0$.

Checking next results, we see that Lemma 4.18, Corollary 4.19, Lemma 4.20 and Lemma 4.21 work without any changes. Also Corollary 4.22 works, with \mathcal{K}_0 replaced by \mathcal{A}_0 . Then we have the following complete analogue of Lemma 4.23.

Lemma 6.13. *The set $\text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$ is nonempty, has the smallest element and the largest element, and is connected. Moreover, if $\text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$ has more than one element, then $\text{Fix}(F) = \bigcup \text{Fix}(\widehat{F})$.*

The proof is the same, just at the end of the proof, instead of saying that if F is identity on the sub-snake $((\mathcal{K}_0, f_i^m))$ then it is identity also on $\langle\langle \mathcal{K}_0, f_i^m \rangle\rangle$, we use the following argument: If F is identity on the sub-snake $((\mathcal{A}_0, f_i^m))$, it is identity also on the set A , because A is in the closure of that sub-snake. Thus, every brick \mathcal{H}_k in the head contains at least two fixed points. Then obviously all the points in the Cook continua \mathcal{H}_k are fixed (formally, one can use the analogue of Lemma 4.10).

The last result in Subsection 4.5, Corollary 4.24, has to be modified as follows.

Corollary 6.14. *If F is not constant, then the set $\text{Fix}(F)$ is either a subset of \mathcal{A}_0 or of the form $\langle\langle \mathcal{A}_0, f_i^m \rangle\rangle$ or $\langle\langle f_j^n, f_i^m \rangle\rangle$ for some $f_j^n \preceq f_i^m$.*

The proof differs from that of Corollary 4.24 only in the beginning: If $F(\mathcal{A}_0) \subseteq \mathcal{A}_0$ then, by Lemma 6.12, F has a fixed point in \mathcal{A}_0 . Then, combining (the analogue of) Corollary 4.19 and Lemma 6.13 we get that either $\text{Fix}(F) \subseteq \mathcal{A}_0$ or $\text{Fix}(F) = \langle\langle \mathcal{A}_0, f_i^m \rangle\rangle$ for some m and i . The rest of the proof is the same as in the proof of Corollary 4.24.

Let us also remark that in Corollary 6.14, instead of “ $\text{Fix}(F)$ is either a subset of \mathcal{A}_0 ” one could in fact write “ $\text{Fix}(F)$ is either $\{a_\infty\}$ ”. This follows from Lemma 6.16(c) below.

We have thus shown that all the results from Subsections 4.4 and 4.5 do work, at least in slightly modified forms, also for our space X which is a candidate for $S(X) = \{0, \log 2\}$. We show that this is sufficient for finishing the proof that really $S(X) = \{0, \log 2\}$.

The analogue of Lemma 4.26 works with almost the same proof. (The only modification is needed in the first paragraph of the proof: Now it is not true that the head is in the closure of the snake. However, the set A is, and so every brick in the head contains points from the closure of the sub-snake. It follows that if the sub-snake is mapped by F^2 to p , in view of Lemma 6.10 so is the head.) Further, the analogue of Lemma 4.27 works even with the same proof. The same is true for the analogue of Lemma 4.28.

Next lemma is quite obvious but for clarity we state it explicitly.

Lemma 6.15. (1) *If there exists $a \in \mathcal{A}_0$ such that $F(a) \notin \mathcal{A}_0$, then $F(\mathcal{A}_0) = F(a)$.*
 (2) *If there exists b in the snake such that $F(b) \in \mathcal{A}_0$, then $F(X) = F(b)$.*

Proof. (2) is just a reformulation of Lemma 6.11(a). To prove (1), let \mathcal{H}_k be the brick containing the point a . Since the bricks in the snake are not homeomorphic to those in the head, Lemma 6.10 gives $F(\mathcal{H}_k) = \{F(a)\}$. For the same reason, the neighboring bricks \mathcal{H}_{k-1} and \mathcal{H}_{k+1} are also mapped to $F(a)$. By induction, this is true for all the bricks in the head and the result follows. \square

Then we get the following analogue of Lemma 4.29.

Lemma 6.16. *Assume that F is not constant and has no fixed point in the snake.*

- (a) *For every m , $\text{jump}(m+1) \in \{\text{jump}(m) - 1, \text{jump}(m)\}$.*
- (b) *The sequence $\text{jump}(1), \text{jump}(2), \dots$ is eventually constant.*
- (c) *There exist positive integers r and N such that on $S_r^\boxtimes = \langle\langle \mathcal{A}_0, x_r \rangle\rangle$ we have*

$$F|_{S_r^\boxtimes} = G^N|_{S_r^\boxtimes}$$

where G is the map from Lemma 6.9.

The proof differs from that of Lemma 4.29 only at the very end of it. When we already get that F and G^N coincide on the sub-snake $\langle\langle \mathcal{A}_0, x_r \rangle\rangle$, we first deduce that, by continuity, they coincide also on the set A which is in the closure of the sub-snake. Hence, by Lemma 6.15(1), $F(\mathcal{A}_0) \subseteq \mathcal{A}_0$. For every $k \in \mathbb{Z}$, $G^N(\mathcal{H}_k) = \mathcal{H}_{k+N}$. Since F coincides with G^N at the extremal points of \mathcal{H}_k , by Lemma 6.10 also $F(\mathcal{H}_k) = \mathcal{H}_{k+N}$. By Lemma 2.12(3), F coincides with G^N on \mathcal{H}_k . Hence F and G^N coincide on S_r^\boxtimes as required.

Finally, we have the following analogue of Proposition 4.30.

Proposition 6.17. *For the one-dimensional continuum X constructed above in (6.25) we have $S(X) = \{0, \log 2\}$. Moreover, if $F : X \rightarrow X$ is a continuous map then $h^*(F) = \log 2$ if F is non-constant and has no fixed point in the snake, otherwise $h^*(F) = 0$.*

Proof. Let $F : X \rightarrow X$ be a continuous map. If F is constant then $h^*(F) = 0$. Now let F be non-constant.

First assume that F has a fixed point in the snake. By Corollary 6.14, $\text{Fix}(F)$ is either of the form $\langle\langle \mathcal{K}_0, f_i^m \rangle\rangle$ or $\langle\langle f_j^n, f_i^m \rangle\rangle$ for some $f_j^n \preceq f_i^m$. Then, by Lemmas 4.26 and 4.27, there exists a positive integer N such that $F^N(X) = \text{Fix}(F)$. This clearly implies that $h_A(F) = 0$ for any sequence A and so $h^*(F) = 0$ (alternatively, use Proposition 2.7(a)).

Now assume that F has no fixed point in the snake. Then, by Lemma 6.16(c), there exist positive integers r and N such that on $S_r^\boxtimes = \langle\langle \mathcal{A}_0, x_r \rangle\rangle$ we have

$$F|_{S_r^\boxtimes} = G^N|_{S_r^\boxtimes}$$

where G is the map from Lemma 6.9. So,

$$h^*(F) \geq h^*(F|_{S_r^\boxtimes}) = h^*(G^N|_{S_r^\boxtimes}) = h^*(G|_{S_r^\boxtimes}) = \log 2 .$$

On the other hand, the jumps in Lemma 6.16 are positive integers and so, for some positive integer M , $F^M(X) \subseteq S_r^\boxtimes$. Then repeated use of Proposition 2.7(a) gives

$$h^*(F) = h^*(F|_{F^M(X)}) \leq h^*(F|_{S_r^\boxtimes}) = \log 2 .$$

We have shown that, for every continuous map F on X , either $h^*(F) = 0$ or $h^*(F) = \log 2$ and so the proposition is proved. \square

7. GENERALIZATION FROM $\log 2$ TO $\log m$

In this section, we will extend the result of Section 5 and Section 6. We show that for any $m \geq 3$, there exists a space X with $S(X) = \{0, \log m\}$.

7.1. A map $T : X_1 \rightarrow X_1$ with $h^*(T) = \log m$ for $m \geq 3$. To get the system (X_1, T) with $h^*(T) = \log m$, $m \geq 3$, one can repeat the construction from Section 5 almost word by word, with just small modifications. Therefore we comment only differences here. For terminology, the reader is referred to Section 5.

Just as in Section 5, $X_1 = A \sqcup Y$ where $A = \{a_i : i \in \mathbb{Z}\} \cup \{a_\infty\}$ and $Y = \{x_0, x_1, \dots\}$ is the trajectory of x_0 . Again, $T(a_i) = a_{i+1}$, $Ta_\infty = a_\infty$ and $Tx_i = x_{i+1}$, $i = 0, 1, \dots$. But this time, the trajectory of x_0 is chosen in such a way that the following requirements are fulfilled:

- (1') $(a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_{m-1})$ is an IN-tuple of length m .
- (2') For $|j| \geq m$, (a_0, a_j) is not an IN-pair.
- (3') (a_0, a_∞) is not an IN-pair.

Similarly as in the beginning of Section 5 (see the text between (5.2) and (5.3)), one can see that to fulfill these three requirements, it is sufficient to fulfill the following two requirements:

- (R1') For every k , the tuple $(U^k(a_0), U^k(a_1), \dots, U^k(a_{m-1}))$ has an independence set of times of cardinality $k + 1$.
- (R2') The tuple $(U^1(a_0), U^1(a_j))$ does not have an independence set of times of cardinality 5 whenever $|j| \geq m$ or $j = \infty$.

Similarly as before, the sequence x_0, x_1, \dots is described as:

$$x_0, x_1, \dots = \text{1st block, 1st outer gap, 2nd block, 2nd outer gap, } \dots$$

and for every k , the k -th block is a concatenation of pieces and inner gaps:

$$k\text{-th block} = \text{1st piece, 1st inner gap, 2nd piece, } \dots, (m^{k+1} - 1)\text{st inner gap, } (m^{k+1})\text{-th piece.}$$

A proper choice of pieces will ensure (R1') and proper choices of inner gaps and outer gaps will ensure (R2').

In Section 5, i.e. in the case $h^*(T) = \log 2$, to ensure (R1), for each k there were 2^{k+1} different pieces. Now, to ensure (R1'), for each k we need m^{k+1} pieces $P(k, l)$ and to separate these different pieces we need more inner gaps $ig(k, j)$ in each block $B(k)$. Denote

$$\begin{aligned} F(k) &= \{0, 1, \dots, m-1\}^{\{0,1,2,\dots,k\}} = \{s_l : 1 \leq l \leq m^{k+1}\}, \\ s_1 &= (0, 0, \dots, 0), \dots, s_{m^{k+1}} = (m-1, m-1, \dots, m-1). \end{aligned} \quad (7.1)$$

For each k we fix, once and for all, a choice of m^{k+1} functions s_l . Say, let them be ordered from s_1 to $s_{m^{k+1}}$ lexicographically (then s_1 and $s_{m^{k+1}}$ are constant, as written above).²⁷

For each l , the piece $P(k, l)$ will be a finite sequence of length $n_k^k + 1$ of the form

$$P(k, l) = x_j, x_{j+1}, \dots, x_{j+n_1^k}, \dots, x_{j+n_2^k}, \dots, x_{j+n_k^k} \quad (7.2)$$

where $j = j(k, l) \geq 0$ will depend on both k and l , but n_1^k, \dots, n_k^k only on k and not on l ,²⁸ such that

$$x_j \in U^k(a_{s_l(0)}), \quad T^{n_i^k} x_j = x_{j+n_i^k} \in U^k(a_{s_l(i)}), \quad 1 \leq i \leq k. \quad (7.3)$$

Equivalently, if we put $n_0^k := 0$, $x_j \in \bigcap_{i=0}^k T^{-n_i^k} U^k(a_{s_l(i)})$. Since this will be true for each s_l , the set

$$N(k) = \{n_0^k = 0, n_1^k, \dots, n_k^k\} \quad (7.4)$$

will be an independence set of times of length $k + 1$ for $(U^k(a_0), U^k(a_1), \dots, U^k(a_{m-1}))$.

Just as in Section 5, the piece $P(k, l)$ consists of k shorter sequences, called *winds*:

$$W_1^{(k,l)} = x_j (= x_{j+n_0^k}), x_{j+1}, \dots, x_{j+n_1^k}, \quad \dots, \quad W_k^{(k,l)} = x_{j+n_{k-1}^k}, \dots, x_{j+n_k^k}. \quad (7.5)$$

²⁷Since the functions s_l depend both on k and l , we should in fact write $s_{(k,l)}$. We abuse notation here hoping that no misunderstanding will arise.

²⁸Therefore we write n_i^k rather than $n_i^{(k,l)}$.

The wind $W_i^{(k,l)}$ starts in $x_{j+n_{i-1}^k} \in U^k(a_{s_l(i-1)})$ and ends in $x_{j+n_i^k} \in U^k(a_{s_l(i)})$.

The pieces and gaps are built analogously as in Section 5. For proving that $h^*(T)$ is $\log m$ (and not higher), we specify appropriately the *independence set of times* $N(k) = \{n_0^k = 0, n_1^k, n_2^k, \dots, n_k^k\}$, the *outer gap length* $og(k)$ and the *inner gap lengths* $ig(k, j)$, $1 \leq j \leq m^{k+1} - 1$. Inductively, we require the following (for $k = 1, 2, \dots$):

- (L1³) $w_1^1 = 3m + 2$ or, equivalently, $n_1^1 = 3m + 1$.
- (L2³) $|IG| \gg |\text{pre}(IG)|$ whenever IG is an inner gap.
- (L3³) $|OG| \gg |\text{pre}(OG)|$ whenever OG is an outer gap.
- (L4³) $|W| \gg |\text{pre}(W)|$ whenever W is a wind in the first piece of a block. (Recall that the lengths of the winds in $P(k, l)$ are the same as those in $P(k, 1)$.)

For any k , the inner gaps $IG(k, j)$, $1 \leq j \leq m^{k+1} - 1$ and outer gaps $OG(k)$ can be chosen similarly as in Section 5, only here we need more inner gaps. Making no difference between a (finite) sequence and its set of values, for the k -th block we have

$$B(k) = \bigcup_{j=1}^{m^{k+1}-1} (P(k, j) \cup IG(k, j)) \cup P(k, m^{k+1}).$$

As in Section 5, the set $Y_k = B(k) \cup OG(k)$ is called the k -th level of the set

$$Y = \bigcup_{k=1}^{\infty} (B(k) \cup OG(k)).$$

The set Y , properly ordered, is the trajectory of the point x_0 , so $Y = \{x_0, x_1, \dots\}$.

We define $\tilde{P}(k, l)$, the l -th part in the k -th level, similarly as in Section 5, but with some modification. Recall that in Section 5, the core of the definition was to make sure that if $x_i \in U^1(a_0)$ then x_i was contained in some part. If we denote by $y_{(k,l),0}$ the first point of $P(k, l)$, then $\tilde{P}(k, l)$ is defined as follows:

- If $y_{(k,l),0} \in U^1(a_0)$, then set $\tilde{P}(k, l) = P(k, l)$;
- If $y_{(k,l),0} \notin U^1(a_0)$ (i.e. $s_l(0) \neq 0$), then set

$$\tilde{P}(k, l) = P(k, l) \cup \{x_t : j - s_l(0) \leq t \leq j - 1\}$$

where $x_j = y_{(k,l),0}$.

We have, analogously as in (5.15), that

$$\text{if } x_i \in U^1(a_0), \text{ then } x_i \in \tilde{P}(k, l) \text{ for some } k \text{ and } l. \quad (7.6)$$

As an analogue of Lemma 5.1, we have the following lemma. The main difference is in (2); recall that in Lemma 5.1(2) we had $t \in \{n_c^k - n_d^k - 1, n_c^k - n_d^k, n_c^k - n_d^k + 1\}$.

Lemma 7.1. *Let $k > 0, l \in \{1, \dots, m^{k+1}\}$.*

- (1) *The piece $P(k, l)$ is of the form*

$$P(k, l) = x_j, x_{j+1}, \dots, x_{j+n_1^k}, \dots, x_{j+n_2^k}, \dots, x_{j+n_k^k}.$$

If $s_l \in F(k)$ is the function corresponding to $P(k, l)$, then we can write (here $n_0^k = 0$)

$$\tilde{P}(k, l) \cap U^1(a_0) = \{x_{j+n_0^k-s_l(0)}, x_{j+n_1^k-s_l(1)}, \dots, x_{j+n_k^k-s_l(k)}\}. \quad (7.7)$$

- (2) *If two points in $\tilde{P}(k, l) \cap U^1(a_0)$ have iterative distance $t > 0$, then*

$$t \in \{n_c^k - n_d^k - (m-1), n_c^k - n_d^k - (m-1) + 1, \dots, n_c^k - n_d^k + (m-1)\}$$

for some $0 \leq d < c \leq k$ and no other pair of points in $\tilde{P}(k, l) \cap U^1(a_0)$ has the same iterative distance t .

Proof. (1) As in (7.2), we have $P(k, l) = x_j, x_{j+1}, \dots, x_{j+n_1^k}, \dots, x_{j+n_2^k}, \dots, x_{j+n_k^k}$. For each $c \in \{0, 1, \dots, k\}$ we have $x_{j+n_c^k} \in U^1(a_{s_l(c)})$ and so

$$x_{j+n_c^k-s_l(c)} \in U^1(a_0).$$

This means that the list of all elements of $\tilde{P}(k, l) \cap U^1(a_0)$ is (7.7).

(2) So, if $t > 0$ and x_s, x_{s+t} are two points in $\tilde{P}(k, l) \cap U^1(a_0)$, there are $0 \leq d < c \leq k$ such that

$$x_s = x_{j+n_d^k-s_l(d)} \quad \text{and} \quad x_{s+t} = x_{j+n_c^k-s_l(c)}$$

note that $s_l(c), s_l(d) \in \{0, 1, \dots, m-1\}$, hence

$$t \in \{n_c^k - n_d^k - (m-1), n_c^k - n_d^k - (m-1) + 1, \dots, n_c^k - n_d^k + (m-1)\}.$$

If $p < q$ and x_p, x_q is *another* pair of points in $\tilde{P}(k, l) \cap U^1(a_0)$, i.e. in the list (7.7), then either $x_p \neq x_{j+n_d^k-s_l(d)}$ or $x_q \neq x_{j+n_c^k-s_l(c)}$. Since by (L4') the lengths of the winds in $P(k, l)$ satisfy the inequalities

$$n_1^k + 1 \ll n_2^k - n_1^k + 1 \ll \dots \ll n_k^k - n_{k-1}^k + 1,$$

the iterative distance $q - p$ of x_q and x_p is different from t . \square

Similarly as in Section 5,

$$E(k, l) = \{x_j, x_{j+n_1^k}, \dots, x_{j+n_k^k}\}$$

is the set of the *endpoints of the winds* in $P(k, l)$. But here we redefine the notion of *almost coincidence*. By saying that two points almost coincide, we now mean that their iterative distance is at most $m - 1$ (rather than at most 1 as in Section 5). By Lemma 7.1(1), the points of $U^1(a_0) \cap \tilde{P}(k, l)$ *almost coincide* with the endpoints of the winds.

The following analogue of Lemma 5.2 works with the same proof.

Lemma 7.2. *Let $s \geq 0$, $t > 0$ and $x_s, x_{s+t} \in U^1(a_0)$. If the points x_s and x_{s+t} belong to different blocks, then they are not $U^1(a_0)$ -left shiftable.*

Analogue to Lemma 5.3, we have the following lemma.

Lemma 7.3. *Let $s \geq 0$, $t > 0$ and $x_s, x_{s+t} \in U^1(a_0) \cap \tilde{P}(k, l)$. Then there is no $h < 0$ such that $x_{s+h} \in U^1(a_0) \cap \bigcup_{i=1}^{k-1} B(i)$ and $x_{s+t+h} \in U^1(a_0) \cap P(k, 1)$.*

Proof. The proof is almost the same as that of Lemma 5.3 but for completeness we give it here. Recall that when we say that two points almost coincide, it means that their iterative distance is at most $m - 1$.

Let $k \geq 2$, otherwise there is nothing to prove. Suppose, on the contrary, that there is $h < 0$ with that property (hence $s + h \geq 0$). We have, as in (7.2),

$$P(k, l) = x_{j(l)}, x_{j(l)+1}, \dots, x_{j(l)+n_1^k}, \dots, x_{j(l)+n_2^k}, \dots, x_{j(l)+n_k^k},$$

where the set $E(k, l) = \{x_{j(l)}, x_{j(l)+n_1^k}, \dots, x_{j(l)+n_k^k}\}$ is the set of the *endpoints of the winds* in $P(k, l)$. Similarly,

$$P(k, 1) = x_{j(1)}, x_{j(1)+1}, \dots, x_{j(1)+n_1^k}, \dots, x_{j(1)+n_2^k}, \dots, x_{j(1)+n_k^k},$$

where $E(k, 1) = \{x_{j(1)}, x_{j(1)+n_1^k}, \dots, x_{j(1)+n_k^k}\}$ is the set of the endpoints of the winds in $P(k, 1)$.

Since $x_s, x_{s+t} \in U^1(a_0) \cap \tilde{P}(k, l)$, by Lemma 7.1(1) we know that they almost coincide with the p -th and the q -th elements in $E(k, l)$, for some $p < q$. The left shift from x_s, x_{s+t} to x_{s+h}, x_{s+t+h} can be performed as the composition of two shorter left shifts. First, we shift x_s, x_{s+t} to points $x_{s+\sigma}, x_{s+t+\sigma}$ which almost coincide with the p -th and the q -th elements in $E(k, 1)$ (this is possible because the lengths of winds in $P(k, l)$ are the same as in $P(k, 1)$). Then the point $x_{s+\sigma}$ is either in $P(k, 1)$ or it is one of the last $m - 1$ points of $OG(k - 1)$. So we need to shift $x_{s+\sigma}, x_{s+t+\sigma}$ still to the left, now finally to x_{s+h}, x_{s+t+h} . Since $OG(k - 1)$ does not contain points from $U^1(a_0)$, this shift has to be at least as long as it is the length of $OG(k - 1)$, which is much larger than $m - 1$. Since x_{s+t+h} has to be in $U^1(a_0)$ and to the left of $x_{s+t+\sigma}$, this second shift (whose length is much larger than $m - 1$) is of course at least as long as the iterative distance between $(q - 1)$ -st and q -th elements in $E(k, 1)$ (see Lemma 7.1(1)), meant in approximative sense, i.e. an error, now definitely not greater than $2(m - 1)$, is possible when we claim this. This iterative distance is, by

(L4'), much larger than $|\text{pre}(W)|$ where W is the wind whose endpoints are the $(q-1)$ -st and q -th elements in $E(k, 1)$. Since $x_{s+\sigma}$ almost coincides with the p -th element of $E(k, 1)$ and $p \leq q-1$, we get that $s+h < 0$, a contradiction. \square

The following is an analogue of Lemma 5.4. The proof is the same as that of Lemma 5.4, one just needs to replace the lemmas used in the proof by their analogues discussed above.

Lemma 7.4. *Let $s \geq 0$, $t > 0$ and let the points $x_s, x_{s+t} \in U^1(a_0)$ be $U^1(a_0)$ -shiftable, i.e. there exists an $h \neq 0$ such that also $x_{s+h} \in U^1(a_0)$ and $x_{s+t+h} \in U^1(a_0)$. Then the following is true.*

- (1) *If $x_s, x_{s+t} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_1)$ for some k and i_1 , then $x_{s+h}, x_{s+t+h} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_2)$ for some $i_2 \neq i_1$.*
- (2) *If $x_s \in \tilde{P}(k, i_1)$, $x_{s+t} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_2)$ for some k and $i_1 < i_2$, then $x_{s+h} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_1)$, $x_{s+t+h} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_2)$.*
- (3) *The points $x_s, x_{s+t}, x_{s+h}, x_{s+t+h}$ belong to the same block $B(k)$, for some k .*
- (4) *If $x_s, x_{s+t} \in \tilde{P}(k, i)$ for some k and i , then x_s, x_{s+h} are in the “similar positions”, meaning that if we write, as in (7.7), the point x_s in the form*

$$x_s = x_{r+n_c^k - s_i(c)} \in \tilde{P}(k, i) \quad \text{for some } 0 \leq c \leq k,$$

then there exists i' such that

$$x_{s+h} = x_{r'+n_c^k - s_{i'}(c)} \in \tilde{P}(k, i') \quad \text{with the same } 0 \leq c \leq k.$$

Here $r, r' \geq 0$ are such that $x_r = y_{(k,i),0}$, $x_{r'} = y_{(k,i'),0}$ are the first points of the pieces $P(k, i), P(k, i')$, respectively, and $s_i, s_{i'} \in F(k)$ are the functions corresponding to the pieces $P(k, i), P(k, i')$, respectively.

- (5) *If $x_s \in \tilde{P}(k, i_1)$ and $x_{s+t} \in \tilde{P}(k, i_2)$ for some k and $i_1 < i_2$, then x_s, x_{s+t} are in the “similar positions”.*

Finally, as an analogue of Theorem 5.5 we have the following theorem.

Theorem 7.5. *The system (X_1, T) has the following properties.*

- (1') *$(a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_{m-1})$ is an IN-tuple of length m .*
- (2') *For $|j| \geq m$, (a_0, a_j) is not an IN-pair.*
- (3') *(a_0, a_∞) is not an IN-pair.*

Hence $h^*(T) = \log m$.

Proof. The whole proof is almost the same as that of Theorem 5.5. However, now $s_l(c) \in \{0, 1, 2, \dots, m-1\}$ and so we need to modify the proof of (2) Case 1 (in a similar way we have modified the proof of Lemma 5.1(2) to get the proof of Lemma 7.1(2)). We are going to describe this modification.

(2') Just as in the proof of Theorem 5.5(2), it is sufficient to prove this for $j \geq m$. So fix $j \geq m$ and assume, on the contrary, that (a_0, a_j) is an IN-pair. It follows that $(U^1(a_0), U^1(a_j))$ has an independence set of times of length 5, i.e. there are pairwise distinct positive integers $l_{-1} < l_0 < l_1 < l_2 < l_3$ such that $\{l_{-1}, l_0, l_1, l_2, l_3\}$ is an independence set of times for $(U^1(a_0), U^1(a_j))$. Then, in particular, there exist pairwise distinct $m_1, m_2, m_3, m_4 \in \mathbb{N}$ such that (notice that in the underlined inclusions we have a_j rather than a_0)

$$x_{m_1+l_{-1}} \in U^1(a_0), x_{m_1+l_0} \in U^1(a_0), x_{m_1+l_1} \in U^1(a_0), x_{m_1+l_2} \in U^1(a_0), x_{m_1+l_3} \in U^1(a_0), \quad (7.8)$$

$$x_{m_2+l_{-1}} \in U^1(a_0), x_{m_2+l_0} \in U^1(a_0), x_{m_2+l_1} \in U^1(a_0), \underline{x_{m_2+l_2} \in U^1(a_j)}, x_{m_2+l_3} \in U^1(a_0), \quad (7.9)$$

$$x_{m_3+l_{-1}} \in U^1(a_0), x_{m_3+l_0} \in U^1(a_0), \underline{x_{m_3+l_1} \in U^1(a_j)}, x_{m_3+l_2} \in U^1(a_0), x_{m_3+l_3} \in U^1(a_0), \quad (7.10)$$

$$x_{m_4+l_{-1}} \in U^1(a_0), \underline{x_{m_4+l_0} \in U^1(a_j)}, x_{m_4+l_1} \in U^1(a_0), x_{m_4+l_2} \in U^1(a_0), x_{m_4+l_3} \in U^1(a_0). \quad (7.11)$$

The same arguments as in the proof of Theorem 5.5 show that the eight points in the first and last columns are in the same $B(k)$, hence all the points in this 4×5 table are in $B(k)$. Further, in the right-upper 3×3 sub-table, all three points in the first row are in the same part, or they are in three different parts. Then we again consider two cases. Only the proof of Case 1 needs a modification, so we discuss only this case.

Case 1: $x_{m_1+l_1}, x_{m_1+l_2}, x_{m_1+l_3} \in \tilde{P}(k, i)$ for some i .

In this case, by Lemma 7.4(1), we have

$$x_{m_1+l_1}, x_{m_1+l_2}, x_{m_1+l_3} \in \tilde{P}(k, i) \quad (7.12)$$

$$x_{m_2+l_1}, x_{m_2+l_3} \in \tilde{P}(k, i') \quad (7.13)$$

$$x_{m_3+l_2}, x_{m_3+l_3} \in \tilde{P}(k, i'') \quad (7.14)$$

where i, i', i'' are pairwise different (note that all these seven points are in $U^1(a_0)$). According to Lemma 7.4(4), $T^{m_2+l_1}x_0$ and $T^{m_1+l_1}x_0$ are in the ‘‘similar positions’’, i.e.

$$x_{m_1+l_1} = x_{r+n_d^k-s_i(d)} \quad \text{and} \quad x_{m_2+l_1} = x_{r'+n_d^k-s_{i'}(d)}$$

for some $0 \leq d \leq k$ (here x_r and $x_{r'}$ are the first points of the pieces $P(k, i)$ and $P(k, i')$, and s_i and $s_{i'}$ are the corresponding functions in $F(k)$). Further, since $x_{m_1+l_2} \in \tilde{P}(k, i)$, we have

$$x_{m_1+l_2} = x_{r+n_c^k-s_i(c)} \quad (7.15)$$

for some $0 \leq c \leq k$ (here $d < c$ and so $n_d^k < n_c^k$, because $m_1+l_1 < m_1+l_2$, but we do not use this property). Then

$$l_2 - l_1 = m_1 + l_2 - (m_1 + l_1) = n_c^k - n_d^k - (s_i(c) - s_i(d)). \quad (7.16)$$

We are interested in the point $x_{m_2+l_2}$, so let us compute (here finally the modifications start)

$$\begin{aligned} m_2 + l_2 &= m_2 + l_1 + (l_2 - l_1) = r' + n_d^k - s_{i'}(d) + (l_2 - l_1) \\ &= r' + n_c^k - s_{i'}(d) - (s_i(c) - s_i(d)) \\ &= r' + n_c^k - s_{i'}(c) + (s_{i'}(c) - s_{i'}(d)) - (s_i(c) - s_i(d)) \\ &\in \{r' + n_c^k - s_{i'}(c) + t : -2(m-1) \leq t \leq 2(m-1)\}. \end{aligned} \quad (7.17)$$

Note that $x_{r'+n_c^k} \in U^1(a_{s_{i'}(c)})$, whence $x_{r'+n_c^k-s_{i'}(c)} \in U^1(a_0)$. Therefore

$$x_{m_2+l_2} \in \bigcup_{t=-2(m-1)}^{2(m-1)} U^1(a_t). \quad (7.18)$$

On the other hand, by (7.9), $x_{m_2+l_2} \in U^1(a_j)$ and so $-2(m-1) \leq j \leq 2(m-1)$. Since in (2') we assume $j \geq m$, we in fact have that j is an integer in the interval $[m, 2(m-1)]$.

Recall that by (7.9), $x_{m_2+l_2} \in U^1(a_j)$. Then, using (7.17) and the fact that $x_{r'+n_c^k-s_{i'}(c)} \in U^1(a_0)$, we get

$$(s_{i'}(c) - s_{i'}(d)) - (s_i(c) - s_i(d)) = j \geq m.$$

However, we have

$$s_{i'}(c) - s_{i'}(d), s_i(c) - s_i(d) \in \{-(m-1), -(m-1)+1, \dots, m-1\}$$

and so

$$s_i(c) - s_i(d) \in \{-(m-1), -(m-1)+1, \dots, -1\}. \quad (7.19)$$

Let $x_{r''}$ be the first point of $P(k, i'')$ and let $s_{i''}$ be the function from $F(k)$ which corresponds to $P(k, i'')$. Then by the construction of each pieces, see (7.2) and (7.3), we have

$$x_{r''+n_u^k-s_{i''}(u)} \in U^1(a_0) \quad \text{for} \quad 0 \leq u \leq k. \quad (7.20)$$

Recall that, by (7.8) and (7.10),

$$x_{m_1+l_2}, x_{m_1+l_3} \in U^1(a_0) \quad \text{and} \quad x_{m_3+l_2}, x_{m_3+l_3} \in U^1(a_0).$$

Therefore, by Lemma 7.4(4), $x_{m_1+l_2}$ and $x_{m_3+l_2}$ are in the ‘‘similar positions’’. In view of (7.15),

$$x_{m_3+l_2} = x_{r''+n_c^k-s_{i''}(c)}.$$

Using this and (7.16) and (7.19) and taking into account that the values of $s_{i''}$ are in $\{0, 1, \dots, m-1\}$, we have

$$\begin{aligned} m_3 + l_1 &= m_3 + l_2 - (l_2 - l_1) \\ &= r'' + n_c^k - s_{i''}(c) - (n_c^k - n_d^k) + (s_i(c) - s_i(d)) \\ &= r'' + n_d^k - s_{i''}(d) + (s_{i''}(d) - s_{i''}(c)) + (s_i(c) - s_i(d)) \\ &\in \{r'' + n_d^k - s_{i''}(d) + t : -2(m-1) \leq t \leq m-2\}. \end{aligned}$$

Since $x_{r'' + n_d^k - s_{i''}(d)} \in U^1(a_0)$ by (7.20), it follows that

$$x_{m_3 + l_1} \in U^1(a_{-2(m-1)}) \cup U^1(a_{-2(m-1)+1}) \cup \dots \cup U^1(a_{m-2}).$$

However, we have $j \geq m$ and so this contradicts the fact that, by (7.10), $x_{m_3 + l_1} \in U^1(a_j)$. \square

7.2. A continuum X with $S(X) = \{0, \log m\}$, $m \geq 3$. To get a continuum X with $S(X) = \{0, \log 2\}$ in Section 6, we used an auxiliary system (X_1, T) from Section 5. Now, to get a continuum X with $S(X) = \{0, \log m\}$ for a given $m \geq 3$, we use the same construction, but we replace the auxiliary system (X_1, T) by the system from Theorem 7.5, with $h^*(T) = \log m$. By joining the consecutive points of the trajectory x_0, x_1, \dots by the continua D_m we then get the required continuum X with $S(X) = \{0, \log m\}$. Indeed, to prove the following proposition, it is basically sufficient to repeat the proof of Proposition 6.17 word by word.

Proposition 7.6. *Let $m \geq 3$. For the one-dimensional continuum X described just above we have $S(X) = \{0, \log m\}$. Moreover, if $F : X \rightarrow X$ is a continuous map then $h^*(F) = \log m$ if F is non-constant and has no fixed point in the snake, otherwise $h^*(F) = 0$.*

8. PROOF OF MAIN THEOREM. ANALOGUES IN OTHER SETTINGS

After a long preparation in previous sections, we are finally ready to prove our Main Theorem (it is repeated below as Theorem 8.2). We also prove that the same conclusion holds when considering homeomorphisms rather than continuous maps, see Theorem 8.3 (Theorem B). The problem is addressed also for *group actions*. In Theorem 8.11 (Theorem C) we show that the result works for the actions (by homeomorphisms) of the finitely generated groups which have \mathbb{Z} as a quotient group. Without the assumption that the group is finitely generated, the result works with possible exceptions of some sets A . In full generality this problem remains open. Analogous results for *semigroup actions* (by continuous maps) are also true, see Theorem 8.13 (Theorem D).

8.1. Proof of Main Theorem. We already know, from Propositions 4.30, 6.17 and 7.6, that if A has just two elements, one of them being of course zero, then there exists a one-dimensional continuum $X_A \subseteq \mathbb{R}^3$ with $S(X_A) = A$. Moreover, from our constructions of these continua X_A (and from our results on them) we know the following facts.

- (F1) If $A = \{0, \infty\}$ or $A = \{0, \log k\}$ for $k \in \{2, 3, \dots\}$, the continuum X_A consists of two parts. The first one (called a head) is a planar continuum. The second one (called a snake) is obtained from just one sequence x_1^A, x_2^A, \dots (which approaches the first part) by joining any two consecutive points of the sequence by an infinite chain of appropriately chosen Cook continua. In what follows, the point x_1^A will be called the *first point of X_A* .
- (F2) If T_A is a continuous selfmap of such a continuum X_A and the first point x_1^A of X_A is fixed for T_A then $h^*(T_A) = 0$ (we have in fact proved that if T_A has a fixed point in the snake then $h^*(T_A) = 0$).
- (F3) In the construction of each of these sets X_A we have used copies of some pairwise disjoint nondegenerate subcontinua of a planar Cook continuum \mathcal{Q} . Since we have only a countable family of such sets X_A (note that so far we have considered only sets A with cardinality 2), we may assume that an infinite family of pairwise disjoint nondegenerate subcontinua of \mathcal{Q} was split into infinitely many infinite subfamilies and in the constructions of different sets X_A we used different subfamilies. So we may assume that if Q_1 and Q_2 are subcontinua of \mathcal{Q} such that their copies are used in the constructions of X_{A_1} and X_{A_2} with $A_1 \neq A_2$ then Q_1 and Q_2 are disjoint.

The last fact is crucial for the following lemma.

Lemma 8.1. *Let $A_1 = \{0, \log k_1\}$ and $A_2 = \{0, \log k_2\}$ for different $k_1, k_2 \in \mathbb{N}^* \setminus \{1\}$. Suppose that X_{A_1} and X_{A_2} , with the first elements $x_1^{A_1}$ and $x_1^{A_2}$, respectively, are subspaces of a metric space Y such that $X_{A_1} \setminus \{x_1^{A_1}\}$ and $X_{A_2} \setminus \{x_1^{A_2}\}$ are disjoint open subsets of Y . Let $F : Y \rightarrow Y$ be a continuous map and $F(X_{A_1}) \cap (X_{A_2} \setminus \{x_1^{A_2}\}) \neq \emptyset$. Then $F(X_{A_1})$ is a singleton.*

Proof. $F(X_{A_1})$ intersects $X_{A_2} \setminus \{x_1^{A_2}\}$ in a point p . Suppose, on the contrary, that $F(X_{A_1}) \neq \{p\}$. Then the continuum $F(X_{A_1})$ contains a nondegenerate subcontinuum lying in $X_{A_2} \setminus \{x_1^{A_2}\}$. This nondegenerate subcontinuum has cardinality \mathfrak{c} , therefore there is a brick in X_{A_1} mapped onto some nondegenerate subcontinuum lying in $X_{A_2} \setminus \{x_1^{A_2}\}$. It follows that there is a nondegenerate subcontinuum in a brick of X_{A_1} which is mapped onto a nondegenerate subcontinuum in a brick of X_{A_2} . However, the Cook continuum Q contains disjoint homeomorphic copies of these two subcontinua, which contradicts Lemma 2.12. \square

We are ready to prove our ultimate result announced in Introduction as Theorem A (Main Theorem).

Theorem 8.2 (Main Theorem). *For every set $\{0\} \subseteq A \subseteq \log \mathbb{N}^*$ there exists a one-dimensional continuum $X_A \subseteq \mathbb{R}^3$ with $S(X_A) = A$.*

Proof. The case $A = \{0\}$ is trivial, just choose any rigid continuum in \mathbb{R}^3 . If A has cardinality 2, the existence of X_A has already been proved.

So, from now on let A have cardinality at least 3. We are going to describe the continuum X_A in this case. For every $k \in \mathbb{N}^* \setminus \{1\}$ put $A(k) = \{0, \log k\}$ and consider the continuum $X_{A(k)}$ we have already constructed in the previous sections. Now choose, in \mathbb{R}^3 , homeomorphic copies of these continua $X_{A(k)}$ (without changing the notation, i.e. still denoting these copies by $X_{A(k)}$) such that their diameters tend to zero and are pairwise disjoint except of the common first point $x_1^{A(2)} = x_1^{A(3)} = \dots = x_1^{A(\infty)} =: z$. What we get is a compact space looking like a ‘flower’ with infinitely many smaller and smaller ‘petals’ (this will be our name for the sets $X_{A(k)}$). To obtain X_A , keep just those petals which correspond to the set A , i.e. denote $I = \{k \in \mathbb{N}^* \setminus \{1\} : \log k \in A\}$ and put $X_A = \bigcup_{k \in I} X_{A(k)}$. This is a flower with finitely many or infinitely many petals (there are at least two petals, because we assume that A has at least three elements). Since the union of countably many closed one-dimensional sets is one-dimensional, also X_A is one-dimensional. Clearly, it is a continuum.

We need to show that $S(X_A) = A = \{0\} \cup \{\log k : k \in I\}$. Since for each $k \in I$ the petal $X_{A(k)}$ is a retract of X_A , we clearly have $S(X_A) \supseteq A$. To prove the converse inclusion, fix a continuous map $F : X_A \rightarrow X_A$ and show that $h^*(F) = 0$ or $\log k$ for some $k \in I$.

Let I_{inv} and I_{not} be the sets of all $k \in I$ for which $X_{A(k)}$ is F -invariant or is not F -invariant, respectively. First assume that $I_{\text{not}} = \emptyset$. Then $F(z) = z$. We are going to show that in this case $h^*(F) = 0$. Suppose on the contrary that for some $x \neq y$ in X_A , the pair (x, y) is an IN-pair for the whole map $F : X_A \rightarrow X_A$. Since at least one of the points x and y is different from z , we may assume that $x \in X_{A(i)} \setminus \{z\}$ (here of course $i \in I_{\text{inv}}$). Choose open neighbourhoods U_x and U_y (in the topology of X_A) of x and y , respectively, such that $U_x \subseteq X_{A(i)} \setminus \{z\}$. Though it is possible that U_y intersects the complement of $X_{A(i)}$, the F -orbits of points from this complement do not intersect U_x . Therefore (x, y) , an IN-pair for F , is an IN-pair even for the restriction F_i of F to the set $X_{A(i)}$. Hence $h^*(F_i) > 0$, which contradicts the fact (F2).

Now assume that $I_{\text{not}} \neq \emptyset$. Denote $X_A^{\text{inv}} = \bigcup_{i \in I_{\text{inv}}} X_{A(i)}$ and $X_A^{\text{not}} = \bigcup_{n \in I_{\text{not}}} X_{A(n)}$. By Lemma 8.1, $F(X_{A(n)})$ is a singleton whenever $n \in I_{\text{not}}$. Then, since all the sets $X_{A(n)}$ intersect, $F(X_A^{\text{not}})$ is a singleton $\{q\}$. If $q \in A(n_0)$ for some $n_0 \in I_{\text{not}}$ then $X_{A(n_0)}$ would be F -invariant, a contradiction. Therefore $q \in X_A^{\text{inv}}$, i.e. $I_{\text{inv}} \neq \emptyset$. So, X_A is the union of two nonempty sets X_A^{inv} and X_A^{not} having the point z in common, the first of them is F -invariant and the second one is mapped by F to the point $q \in X_A^{\text{inv}}$. By Theorem 2.6(e), $h^*(F) = h^*(F_{\text{inv}})$ where F_{inv} is the restriction of F to the set X_A^{inv} . If I_{inv} contains just one element k , we have $X_A^{\text{inv}} = X_{A(k)}$ and then $h^*(F) \in \{0, \log k\}$ and we are done. If I_{inv} contains at least two elements, the set X_A^{inv} is a flower with at least two petals and by the case considered above (the case $I_{\text{not}} = \emptyset$) we get that $h^*(F) = 0$. \square

8.2. Analogue of Main Theorem for homeomorphisms. As an analogue of the set $S(X)$ from (1.3), for any compact metric space X put

$$S_{\text{hom}}(X) = \{h^*(T) : T \text{ is a homeomorphism } X \rightarrow X\}.$$

Our Main Theorem has the following analogue for homeomorphisms (it is in fact Theorem B from Introduction). The proof needs a construction, due to Hanfeng Li [34], which did not appear in the proof of Main Theorem.

Theorem 8.3 (Theorem B). *For every set $\{0\} \subseteq A \subseteq \log \mathbb{N}^*$ there exists a one-dimensional continuum $\tilde{X}_A \subseteq \mathbb{R}^3$ with $S_{\text{hom}}(\tilde{X}_A) = A$.*

Proof. The proof is to large extent similar to that of Main Theorem.

The case $A = \{0\}$ is trivial, any rigid continuum in the plane can be chosen as \tilde{X}_A . We are going to consider the nontrivial cases.

Case 1: A has cardinality 2.

First consider the set $A = \{0, \infty\}$. We begin with the continuum X from Lemma 4.2, see Figure 4.4 and Proposition 4.30. For our purposes we modify this continuum X as follows.

- The continuum X has the ‘first’ point x_1 . We add a converging sequence of points $x_0, x_{-1}, x_{-2}, \dots$ with

$$P_2(x_j) = P_2(x_1), \quad j = 0, -1, -2, \dots \text{ and } P_1(x_1) < P_1(x_0) < P_1(x_{-1}) < P_1(x_{-2}) < \dots$$

We denote the limit of this sequence by $x_{-\infty}$ and we add also this point to X .

- For $m \in \mathbb{N}$, the points x_m and x_{m+1} in X are joined by the continuum D_m from (4.9), see also Figure 4.3. We replace the (non-homeomorphic) continua D_m , $m \in \mathbb{N}$, by *homeomorphic* continua \tilde{D}_m , $m \in \mathbb{N}$, each of them being a homeomorphic copy of, say, D_1 . Further, also for $m = 0, -1, -2, \dots$ we join x_m and x_{m+1} by a continuum \tilde{D}_m which is again a homeomorphic copy of D_1 . So, now all the continua \tilde{D}_m , $m \in \mathbb{Z}$, are homeomorphic and they are copies of D_1 . We may of course assume that the continua \tilde{D}_m are pairwise disjoint, except that two consecutive continua have one point in common. This can of course be done in such a way that we still have properties analogous to those in Lemma 4.1. In particular, the sequence of Cook continua which forms \tilde{D}_m ‘goes’ from x_m to x_{m+1} and not in the opposite direction, and the diameters of \tilde{D}_m tend to zero as $|m| \rightarrow \infty$.

These modifications yield a one-dimensional continuum $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \infty\}}$, see Figure 8.1. The point $x_{-\infty}$ will be called the *starting point* of $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \infty\}}$.

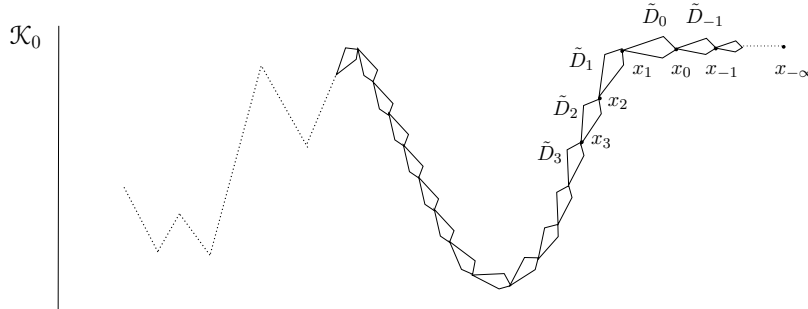


FIGURE 8.1. $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \infty\}} = \mathcal{K}_0 \sqcup \bigcup_{m \in \mathbb{Z}} \tilde{D}_m \sqcup \{x_{-\infty}\}$.

Denote by $\tilde{G}_{\{0, \infty\}} : \tilde{X}_{\{0, \infty\}} \rightarrow \tilde{X}_{\{0, \infty\}}$ the homeomorphism which maps \tilde{D}_m onto \tilde{D}_{m+1} , $m \in \mathbb{Z}$ (and so is the identity on $\mathcal{K}_0 \cup \{x_{-\infty}\}$). In particular, $\tilde{G}_{\{0, \infty\}}$ restricted to the set $\mathcal{K}_0 \cup \{x_1, x_2, x_3, \dots\}$ coincides

with the map T from Subsection 3.1 (provided \mathcal{C}_0 is chosen to be \mathcal{K}_0). Since we have shown there that $h^*(T) = \infty$, we necessarily have $h^*(\tilde{G}_{\{0,\infty\}}) = \infty$.

On the other hand, let $G: \tilde{X}_{\{0,\infty\}} \rightarrow \tilde{X}_{\{0,\infty\}}$ be any homeomorphism. Taking into account the structure of $\tilde{X}_{\{0,\infty\}}$, G is the identity on \mathcal{K}_0 . Suppose it is not the identity on the whole of $\tilde{X}_{\{0,\infty\}}$. Then, since each \tilde{D}_m is homeomorphic to D_1 and D_1 is the closure of a ‘concatenation’ of pairwise non-homeomorphic Cook continua, there exist $k \in \mathbb{N}$, $m \in \mathbb{Z}$ and $n \in \mathbb{Z} \setminus \{0\}$ such that some interior point of the k -th Cook continuum in \tilde{D}_m is mapped by G to an interior point of the k -th Cook continuum in \tilde{D}_{m+n} . Hence G maps the k -th Cook continuum in \tilde{D}_m onto the k -th Cook continuum in \tilde{D}_{m+n} . Then it is not difficult to show that $G(\tilde{D}_m) = \tilde{D}_{m+n}$ and in fact that G is the n -th iterate of $\tilde{G}_{\{0,\infty\}}$ on the whole of $\tilde{X}_{\{0,\infty\}}$. We have thus shown that the only homeomorphisms on $\tilde{X}_{\{0,\infty\}}$ are just all the iterates of $\tilde{G}_{\{0,\infty\}}$. This together with $h^*(\tilde{G}_{\{0,\infty\}}) = \infty$ and the fact that $h^*(\varphi^n) = h^*(\varphi)$ whenever φ is a homeomorphism and $n \neq 0$, imply that $S_{\text{hom}}(\tilde{X}_{\{0,\infty\}}) = \{0, \infty\}$.

Notice that for every homeomorphism on $\tilde{X}_{\{0,\infty\}}$ the starting point $x_{-\infty}$ of $\tilde{X}_{\{0,\infty\}}$ is a fixed point.

Now consider the set $A = \{0, \log m\}$ where $m \geq 2$. The construction of $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}$ is the same as above construction of $\tilde{X}_{\{0,\infty\}}$, the only difference is that now we begin with the continuum X from Section 6 if $m = 2$ or Section 7 if $m \geq 3$. For this X we have $S(X) = \{0, \log m\}$ and we modify it similarly as above, to get $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}$. Again, all the homeomorphisms of $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}$ are just the iterates of one distinguished homeomorphism $\tilde{G}_{\{0, \log m\}}$ which maps \tilde{D}_m onto \tilde{D}_{m+1} , $m \in \mathbb{Z}$. It follows from Section 6 if $m = 2$ or Section 7 if $m \geq 3$ that the restriction of this homeomorphism to the union of the head and the ‘forward’ part of the snake (lying between x_0 and the head) has the supremum topological sequence entropy equal to $\log m$. Using Proposition 2.6(c), one can see that adding the ‘backward’ part of the snake does not change it, i.e. $h^*(\tilde{G}_{\{0, \log m\}}) = \log m$. Then the proof that $S_{\text{hom}}(\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}) = \{0, \log m\}$ is completely analogous to the above proof that $S_{\text{hom}}(\tilde{X}_{\{0,\infty\}}) = \{0, \infty\}$.

Again, remember that similarly as above, for every homeomorphism on $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}$ the naturally defined starting point of $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}$ is a fixed point.

Finally, before going to Case 2, note that in Case 1 we have constructed countably many continua $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}$, $m \in \{2, 3, \dots\} \cup \{\infty\}$, and for the construction of each of them we have used only countably many Cook continua. Therefore we may assume that we have chosen countably many disjoint subcontinua of a Cook continuum in the plane, then we have divided them into countably many disjoint countable families, and different families have been used to construct different spaces $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}$, still keeping one of those families unused, i.e. as a reservoir of Cook continua for further use. To express this fact we will, though not very precisely, just say that the spaces $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}$ are constructed by using different families of Cook continua.

*Case 2: A has cardinality ≥ 3 .*²⁹

For every $m \in \{2, 3, \dots\} \cup \{\infty\}$ consider the continuum $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}$ we have already constructed in Case 1 above. Since we will work with many such continua simultaneously, we will now use double indices; for every m we will write

$$\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}} = \underbrace{\{x_{m, -\infty}\} \cup \bigcup_{k < 0} \tilde{D}_{m, k} \cup \tilde{D}_{m, 0}}_{\tilde{D}_m^-} \cup \underbrace{\bigcup_{k > 0} \tilde{D}_{m, k} \cup \text{head}_m}_{\tilde{D}_m^+}.$$

Here $x_{m, -\infty}$ is the starting point of $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}$, head_m is the head of $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}$ (such as the set \mathcal{K}_0 in Figure 8.1, where $m = \infty$) and recall that the continuum $\tilde{D}_{m, 0}$ with first point $x_{m, 0}$ and last point $x_{m, 1}$ is the union of a sequence of different Cook continua, together with one limit point (which is the last point $x_{m, 1}$). The other sets $\tilde{D}_{m, k}$, $k \in \mathbb{Z} \setminus \{0\}$, are homeomorphic copies of $\tilde{D}_{m, 0}$. The first point of $\tilde{D}_{m, k+1}$ coincides with the last point of $\tilde{D}_{m, k}$ for all k . Recall also that the homeomorphism group of $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}$ is isomorphic to \mathbb{Z} , with the generator $\tilde{G}_{\{0, \log m\}}$ sending $\tilde{D}_{m, k}$ to $\tilde{D}_{m, k+1}$ for all k . For every homeomorphism on $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}$, the starting point $x_{m, -\infty}$ is a fixed point and the set head_m is invariant.

²⁹The construction in this case was suggested by Hanfeng Li.

Consider numbers $0 = c_1 < c_2 < c_3 < \dots$ with $\lim_{m \rightarrow \infty} c_m = 1$. The sets $[0, 1]^2 \times (c_m, c_{m+1})$ will be called *layers*, see Figure 8.2. For every $m \in \{\infty\} \cup \{2, 3, \dots\}$ we choose a copy of $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}$, still denoted by the same symbol, and a continuum C_m , satisfying the following conditions, see Figure 8.3:

- $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}$ lies in the layer $[0, 1]^2 \times (c_m, c_{m+1})$ if m is finite, $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \infty\}}$ lies in the layer $[0, 1]^2 \times (c_1, c_2)$;
- the projections, into the x, y -plane, of the first point $x_{m,0}$ and the last point $x_{m,1}$ of $\tilde{D}_{m,0}$ coincide with the points $[1, 1]$ and $[0, 1]$, respectively;
- the continuum $\tilde{D}_{m,0}$ is in the ε_m -neighborhood of the straight line segment whose endpoints are the first point and the last point of $\tilde{D}_{m,0}$, and $\varepsilon_m \rightarrow 0$ as $m \rightarrow \infty$;
- the diameters of \tilde{D}_m^- and \tilde{D}_m^+ tend to zero as $m \rightarrow \infty$;
- C_m is a (copy of a) Cook continuum from the reservoir mentioned at the end of Case 1, and for different m 's these continua are different (non-homeomorphic);
- C_m contains the starting point $x_{m,-\infty}$ of $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}$ and the point $w = [0, 0, 1]$, and lies in the ε_m -neighborhood of the straight line segment joining these two points, with $\varepsilon_m \rightarrow 0$ as $m \rightarrow \infty$;
- for $m \in \{\infty\} \cup \{2, 3, \dots\}$, the continua

$$L_m = C_m \cup \tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}$$

are pairwise disjoint, except that each of them contains the point w .

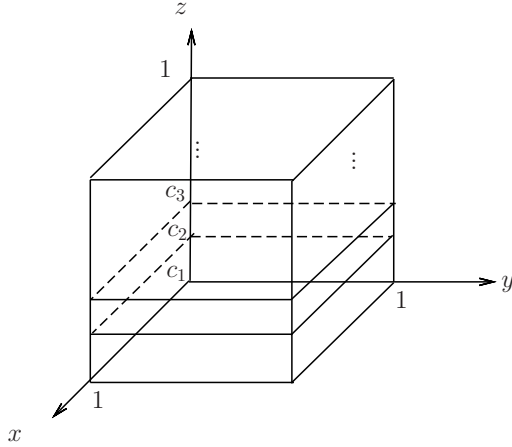


FIGURE 8.2. A layer.

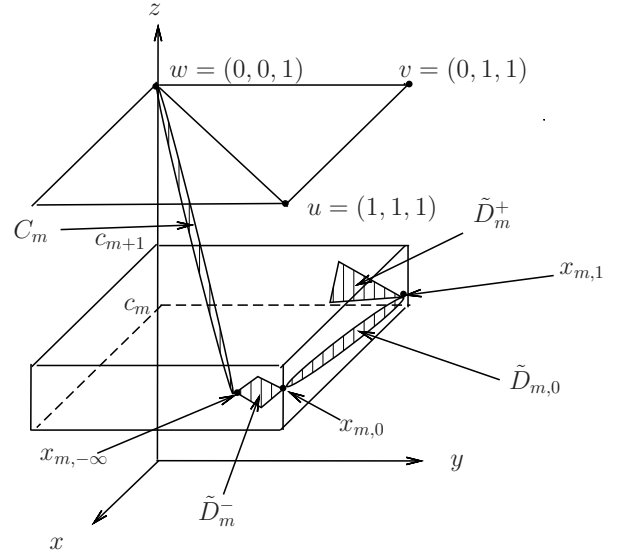


FIGURE 8.3. The continuum L_m .

Consider further the points $u = [1, 1, 1]$ and $v = [0, 1, 1]$ and denote by $[u, v]$ the straight line segment from u to v . Similarly, let $[w, u]$ be the straight line segment from w to u . Notice that, in the Hausdorff metric, the continua C_m converge to $[w, u]$ and the continua $\tilde{D}_{m,0}$, as well as the continua $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}$, converge to $[u, v]$.

Now finally define

$$\tilde{X}_A = \begin{cases} \bigcup \{L_m : 2 \leq m \leq \infty \text{ and } \log m \in A\}, & \text{if } A \text{ is finite,} \\ \bigcup \{L_m : 2 \leq m \leq \infty \text{ and } \log m \in A\} \cup [w, u] \cup [u, v], & \text{if } A \text{ is infinite.} \end{cases} \quad (8.1)$$

Clearly, \tilde{X}_A is a one-dimensional continuum. Notice that it is still a kind of a ‘flower’, with central point w and ‘petals’ $[w, u] \cup [u, v]$ (if A is infinite) and L_m (for $2 \leq m \leq \infty$ such that $\log m \in A$), but now it is a more complicated flower than that from the proof of Theorem 8.2, since in the case of infinite A the petals

L_m converge to the petal $[w, u] \cup [u, v]$. Notice also that \tilde{X}_A has at least two petals, since A has cardinality at least three.

We need to show that $S_{\text{hom}}(\tilde{X}_A) = A$. Trivially, $S_{\text{hom}}(\tilde{X}_A) \ni 0$. Fix $m \in \{2, 3, \dots\} \cup \{\infty\}$ with $\log m \in A$ and a homeomorphism G_m on \tilde{X}_A such that it is the identity on $\tilde{X}_A \setminus \tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}$ and on $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}$ coincides with the distinguished homeomorphism $\tilde{G}_{\{0, \log m\}}$, the generator of the homeomorphism group of $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}$. Note that $x_{m, -\infty}$ is a fixed point for this generator, so G_m is well defined. Since $h^*(\tilde{G}_{\{0, \log m\}}) = \log m$, we obviously have $h^*(G_m) = \log m$. We have thus shown that $S_{\text{hom}}(\tilde{X}_A) \supseteq A$.

To prove that also $S_{\text{hom}}(\tilde{X}_A) \subseteq A$, let $H: \tilde{X}_A \rightarrow \tilde{X}_A$ be any homeomorphism different from the identity. We are going to show that $h^*(H) \in A$ (for identity it is trivial). Since the petals L_m of the space \tilde{X}_A are constructed by using different families of Cook continua, each of them is H -invariant (hence, if A is infinite, also $[w, u] \cup [u, v]$ is H -invariant). Moreover, H is obviously the identity on C_m (hence, if A is infinite, also on $[w, u]$) and is a k_m -th iterate of $\tilde{G}_{\{0, \log m\}}$ on $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}$.

Suppose that the set of those m 's for which $k_m > 0$ is infinite (i.e. there is a sequence of layers L_m with $k_m > 0$, which converges to $[w, u] \cup [u, v]$). For every such m , the set $\tilde{D}_{m, -k_m}$ (which is a subset of \tilde{D}_m^-) is mapped by H onto the set $\tilde{D}_{m, 0}$ whose diameter is at least 1. Since diameters of \tilde{D}_m^- tend to zero as $m \rightarrow \infty$, we have a contradiction with uniform continuity of H . (Alternately, one can argue as follows. If $k_m > 0$ then $H(x_{m, 0}) \in \tilde{D}_m^+$ and since we have infinitely many such m 's, the fact that the diameters of \tilde{D}_m^+ tend to zero and the continuity of H imply that $H(u) = v$. However, we have already shown that $H(u) = u$, a contradiction.) Similarly, we get a contradiction with uniform continuity if $k_m < 0$ for infinitely many m 's. (Or, one can show that in such a case we would have $H(v) = u$ which is a contradiction because $H(u) = u$ and H is a homeomorphism.) Thus we conclude that H is identity on the whole space \tilde{X}_A except of finitely many petals L_m ; more precisely, except of *finitely many* continua $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}$ (there is at least one such continuum, because H is different from the identity). Since these continua are pairwise disjoint and $S_{\text{hom}}(\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}) = \{0, \log m\}$, we get that $h^*(H)$ equals the maximum of $\log m$ for such m 's. Hence $h^*(H) \in A$. \square

Remark 8.4. The reader might be curious why, in Case 2, we did not use the simpler construction with a 'standard' flower with petals, exactly as in the proof of Theorem 8.2. In fact, it is obvious that such a flower can be used if A is finite. One can show that it works also when A is infinite and closed with respect to the supremum. However, it does not work in other cases, i.e. when A is infinite and $\infty \notin A$. Indeed, let A consist of 0 and *numbers* $\log k_i$ for some $2 \leq k_1 < k_2 < \dots$ (note that $\sup_{i=1, 2, \dots} \log k_i = \infty \notin A$). Consider the flower F_A whose petals are $X_{k_i} = \tilde{X}_{\{0, \log k_i\}}$, $i = 1, 2, \dots$. Then F_A admits a homeomorphism H such that it fixes the central point of the flower, every petal X_{k_i} is H -invariant and the restriction H_i of H to that petal has $h^*(H_i) = \log k_i$. By (2.1) we easily get $h^*(H) = \infty$ and so

$$S_{\text{hom}}(F_A) = A \cup \{\infty\} \neq A.$$

So, due to such sets A a more sophisticated construction was needed.

8.3. Analogues of Main Theorem for group actions and semigroup actions. By a *dynamical system* we now mean a triple (X, G, Φ) , where X is a compact metric space, G is a topological group and Φ is an *action of G on X* , i.e. a continuous map $\Phi: G \times X \rightarrow X$ such that $\Phi(s, \Phi(t, x)) = \Phi(st, x)$ for all $s, t \in G$ and $\Phi(e, x) = x$ for every $x \in X$, where e is the neutral element of the group G . For each $s \in G$, the *acting map* $\Phi_s: X \rightarrow X$ defined by $\Phi_s(x) := \Phi(s, x) =: sx$ can easily be proved to be a homeomorphism. To define Φ is the same as to define all Φ_s . We also say that Φ is a *G -action* (on the space X). In the sequel, when speaking on G -actions, we always assume that G has *discrete topology*. Then, to check the continuity of a map $\Phi: G \times X \rightarrow X$, it is sufficient to check the continuity of all Φ_s .

Note that the topological sequence entropy is developed in the literature for a single continuous map, but we can also work in the framework of a dynamical system (X, G, Φ) . Following Goodman [18] and Kerr-Li [30], for a sequence $\sigma = \{s_n\}_{n \in \mathbb{Z}_+}$ in G we define the topological sequence entropy of (X, G, Φ) with respect to σ and a finite open cover \mathcal{U} of X by

$$h^\sigma(G, \mathcal{U}, \Phi) = \limsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \log \mathcal{N} \left(\bigvee_{i=0}^{n-1} s_i^{-1} \mathcal{U} \right), \quad (8.2)$$

where $\mathcal{N}(\cdot)$ denotes the minimal cardinality of a subcover. Then the sequence entropy with respect to σ is defined by $h^\sigma(X, G, \Phi) = \sup_{\mathcal{U}} h^\sigma(G, \mathcal{U}, \Phi)$, where \mathcal{U} runs over all finite open covers of X . Again, by [28, Theorem A.1], we can define the *supremum topological sequence entropy*

$$h^*(X, G, \Phi) = \sup\{h^\sigma(X, G, \Phi) : \sigma = \{s_n\}_{n \in \mathbb{Z}_+} \text{ is a sequence in } G\}. \quad (8.3)$$

Definition 8.5. Let (X, G, Φ) be a dynamical system and $\tilde{A} = (A_1, \dots, A_k)$ be a tuple of subsets of X . We say that a subset $J \subseteq G$ is an *independence set* for \tilde{A} (or that \tilde{A} has the *independence set* J) if for any nonempty finite subset $I \subseteq J$, we have

$$\bigcap_{s \in I} s^{-1} A_{\sigma(s)} \neq \emptyset$$

for any function $\sigma : I \rightarrow \{1, \dots, k\}$. If such a set J is finite and has p elements, we also say that it is an *independence set*, or *independence set of times*, of length p .

Definition 8.6. Consider a tuple $\tilde{x} = (x_1, \dots, x_k) \in X^k$. If for every product neighbourhood $U_1 \times \dots \times U_k$ of \tilde{x} the tuple (U_1, \dots, U_k) has arbitrarily long finite independence sets, then the tuple \tilde{x} is called an *IN-tuple* in (X, G, Φ) .

As before we may define the sequence entropy tuples, see [30] for details. We have the following proposition proved in [30, Theorem 5.9].

Proposition 8.7. Let (x_1, \dots, x_k) be a tuple in $X^k \setminus \Delta_k$ with $k \geq 2$. Then (x_1, \dots, x_k) is a sequence entropy tuple if and only if it is an IN-tuple.

Now for a dynamical system (X, G, Φ) we have, by [28, Theorem A.3], that

$$h^*(X, G, \Phi) = \sup\{\log n : \text{there is an intrinsic sequence entropy tuple of length } n\} \quad (8.4)$$

and, in view of Proposition 8.7, we can also write

$$h^*(X, G, \Phi) = \sup\{\log n : \text{there is an intrinsic IN-tuple of length } n\}. \quad (8.5)$$

Finally, for a fixed topological group G and a fixed compact metric space X we put

$$S_G(X) = \{h^*(X, G, \Phi) : \Phi \text{ is an action of } G \text{ on } X\}. \quad (8.6)$$

We emphasize that in the left side of the definition (8.6), G is a fixed group.

In the sequel we will use simple but useful observations from the following two lemmas.

Lemma 8.8. Consider the well known one-one correspondence between homeomorphisms on X and \mathbb{Z} -actions on X ; the \mathbb{Z} -action Φ^φ with the acting maps $(\Phi^\varphi)_m = \varphi^m$, $m \in \mathbb{Z}$, corresponds to the homeomorphism φ . Then

$$h^*(\varphi) = h^*(X, \mathbb{Z}, \Phi^\varphi). \quad (8.7)$$

Proof. We show that every IN-tuple in $(X, \mathbb{Z}, \Phi^\varphi)$ in the sense of Definition 8.6 is an IN-tuple in (X, φ) in the sense of Definition 2.4 (the converse is trivial since $\mathbb{Z}_+ \subseteq \mathbb{Z}$).

Assume that $\tilde{x} = (x_1, \dots, x_k)$ is an IN-tuple in $(X, \mathbb{Z}, \Phi^\varphi)$. Let $U_1 \times \dots \times U_k$ be the product neighbourhood of \tilde{x} and let $J = \{l_1, l_2, \dots, l_t\} \subseteq \mathbb{Z}$ be an independence set of length t for (U_1, \dots, U_k) . If $l_j \geq 0$ for $j = 1, 2, \dots, t$, then J is also the independence set of length t for (U_1, \dots, U_k) in (X, φ) . If some of the integers l_j is negative, there exists $m > 0$ such that $l_j + m \geq 0$ for all $j = 1, 2, \dots, t$. Let $\tilde{l}_j = l_j + m$ and $\tilde{J} = \{\tilde{l}_j : j = 1, 2, \dots, t\}$. For any function $\sigma : J \rightarrow \{1, \dots, k\}$, we define $\tilde{\sigma} : \tilde{J} \rightarrow \{1, \dots, k\}$ by $\tilde{\sigma}(\tilde{l}_j) = \sigma(l_j)$, $j = 1, 2, \dots, t$. Since

$$\bigcap_{j=1}^t \varphi^{-l_j} U_{\sigma(l_j)} = \bigcap_{j=1}^t (\Phi^\varphi)^{-l_j} U_{\sigma(l_j)} \neq \emptyset,$$

we also have

$$\bigcap_{j=1}^t \varphi^{-\tilde{l}_j} U_{\tilde{\sigma}(\tilde{l}_j)} = \bigcap_{j=1}^t \varphi^{-(l_j+m)} U_{\sigma(l_j)} = \varphi^{-m} \left(\bigcap_{j=1}^t \varphi^{-l_j} U_{\sigma(l_j)} \right) \neq \emptyset,$$

this implies that \tilde{J} is an independence set of length t for (U_1, \dots, U_k) in (X, φ) . Hence $\tilde{x} = (x_1, \dots, x_k)$ is an IN-tuple in (X, φ) . \square

Lemma 8.9. *Let (X, G_1, Φ) and (X, G_2, Ψ) be dynamical systems.*

- (1) *Assume that for every $s \in G_1$ there exists $t \in G_2$ with $\Phi_s = \Psi_t$. Then $h^*(X, G_1, \Phi) \leq h^*(X, G_2, \Psi)$.*
- (2) *Assume that for every $s \in G_1$ there exists $t \in G_2$ with $\Phi_s = \Psi_t$ and for every $t \in G_2$ there exists $s \in G_1$ with $\Psi_t = \Phi_s$. Then $h^*(X, G_1, \Phi) = h^*(X, G_2, \Psi)$.*

Proof. Due to symmetry, it is sufficient to prove (1). By the assumption, for every sequence $\sigma = \{s_n\}_{n \in \mathbb{Z}_+}$ in G_1 there is a sequence $\tau = \{t_n\}_{n \in \mathbb{Z}_+}$ in G_2 such that $\Phi_{s_n} = \Psi_{t_n}$ for every n . Then $h^\sigma(X, G_1, \Phi) = h^\tau(X, G_2, \Psi)$. It follows that $h^*(X, G_1, \Phi) \leq h^*(X, G_2, \Psi)$. \square

Based on the above observations, we get the following proposition.

Proposition 8.10. *Let X be a compact metric space.*

- (a) $S_{\text{hom}}(X) = S_{\mathbb{Z}}(X)$.
- (b) *Let G_1, G_2 be topological groups such that there is a surjective group homomorphism $\kappa: G_2 \rightarrow G_1$. Then $S_{G_2}(X) \supseteq S_{G_1}(X)$.*
- (c) *Let G be a topological group such that there is a surjective group homomorphism $G \rightarrow \mathbb{Z}$. Then for every set $\{0\} \subseteq A \subseteq \log \mathbb{N}^*$ there exists a one-dimensional continuum $\tilde{X}_A \subseteq \mathbb{R}^3$ with $S_G(\tilde{X}_A) \supseteq A$.*

Proof. (a) This follows from (8.7) and the one-one correspondence discussed above in Lemma 8.8.

(b) Fix $h^*(X, G_1, \Phi) \in S_{G_1}(X)$. To prove that $h^*(X, G_1, \Phi) \in S_{G_2}(X)$, it is sufficient to find a G_2 -action Ψ on X with $h^*(X, G_1, \Phi) = h^*(X, G_2, \Psi)$.

The acting maps of Φ are homeomorphisms $\Phi_s: X \rightarrow X$, $s \in G_1$. To define Ψ , for $t \in G_2$ put $\Psi_t = \Phi_{\kappa(t)}$. Since the topology in G_2 is discrete, κ is continuous. Since also Φ is continuous, we get that Ψ is continuous. Since κ is a homomorphism, it is straightforward to check that then Ψ is a G_2 -action on X .

Since κ is surjective, for every $s \in G_1$ there is $t \in G_2$ with $\kappa(t) = s$ and so $\Psi_t = \Phi_{\kappa(t)} = \Phi(s)$. On the other hand, for every $t \in G_2$ we have $s := \kappa(t) \in G_1$ and $\Psi_t = \Phi_{\kappa(t)} = \Phi_s$. By Lemma 8.9 then $h^*(X, G_1, \Phi) = h^*(X, G_2, \Psi)$.

(c) For a given set $\{0\} \subseteq A \subseteq \log \mathbb{N}^*$, let \tilde{X}_A be the space defined in the proof of Theorem 8.3. Then $S_{\text{hom}}(\tilde{X}_A) = A$. To finish the proof, use (b) and (a) to get $S_G(\tilde{X}_A) \supseteq S_{\mathbb{Z}}(\tilde{X}_A) = S_{\text{hom}}(\tilde{X}_A)$. \square

The following theorem on group actions is an analogue of our Main Theorem and Theorem 8.3 but it deals only with special kinds of groups (it is Theorem C from Introduction).

Theorem 8.11 (Theorem C). *Let G be a topological group such that there is a surjective group homomorphism $G \rightarrow \mathbb{Z}$. Then for every set $\{0\} \subseteq A \subseteq \log \mathbb{N}^*$ with A finite or $\infty \in A$, there exists a one-dimensional continuum $\tilde{X}_A \subseteq \mathbb{R}^3$ with $S_G(\tilde{X}_A) = A$. If in addition G is also finitely generated, then such a continuum exists for every set $\{0\} \subseteq A \subseteq \log \mathbb{N}^*$.*

Proof. Fix a set A such that $\{0\} \subseteq A \subseteq \log \mathbb{N}^*$. Let \tilde{X}_A be the space defined in the proof of Theorem 8.3 and used also in the proof of Proposition 8.10(c). In view of this proposition it remains to check whether $S_G(\tilde{X}_A) \subseteq A$.

Let $\Phi: G \times \tilde{X}_A \rightarrow \tilde{X}_A$ be a G -action on \tilde{X}_A . It can be viewed as a group homomorphism from G into the group $\mathcal{H}(\tilde{X}_A)$ of all self-homeomorphisms of \tilde{X}_A ; the set $\{\Phi_s: s \in G\}$ is a subgroup of $\mathcal{H}(\tilde{X}_A)$. So, when computing $h^*(\tilde{X}_A, G, \Phi)$, we can view G as a subgroup of $\mathcal{H}(\tilde{X}_A)$. More precisely, by Lemma 8.9(2) we have

$$h^*(\tilde{X}_A, G, \Phi) = h^*(\tilde{X}_A, \{\Phi_s: s \in G\}, \Psi) \quad (8.8)$$

where Ψ is an action of the group $\{\Phi_s: s \in G\}$ on the space \tilde{X}_A defined by $\Psi(\Phi_s, x) = \Phi(s, x) = \Phi_s(x)$, i.e. $\Psi_{\Phi_s} = \Phi_s$.

Case 1: A has cardinality 2.

Assume that $A = \{0, \log m\}$, $m \in \mathbb{N}^*$, i.e. $\tilde{X}_A = \tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}$. Then the total homeomorphism group $\mathcal{H}(\tilde{X}_A) = \{(\tilde{G}_{\{0, \log m\}})^n: n \in \mathbb{Z}\}$, where $\tilde{G}_{\{0, \log m\}}$ is the distinguished homeomorphism from the proof of Theorem 8.3. Since $\{\Phi_s: s \in G\}$ is a subgroup of this (infinite cyclic) group, there are two possibilities.

- (1) The first possibility is that $\{\Phi_s : s \in G\} = \{\text{Id}|_{\tilde{X}_A}\}$. Then $h^*(\tilde{X}_A, G, \Phi) = 0 \in A$.
- (2) The second possibility is that $\{\Phi_s : s \in G\} = \{(\tilde{G}_{\{0, \log m\}}^d)^n : n \in \mathbb{Z}\}$ for some integer $d > 0$. Then, by Lemma 8.9(2),

$$h^*(\tilde{X}_A, \{\Phi_s : s \in G\}, \Psi) = h^*(\tilde{X}_A, \{(\tilde{G}_{\{0, \log m\}}^d)^n : n \in \mathbb{Z}\}, \Psi) = h^*(\tilde{X}_A, \mathbb{Z}, \Theta) \quad (8.9)$$

with Θ being a \mathbb{Z} -action on \tilde{X}_A defined by $\Theta(n, x) = \Psi((\tilde{G}_{\{0, \log m\}}^d)^n, x) = \Psi(\Phi_s, x)$, i.e. $\Theta_n = \Psi_{\Phi_s}$, where s is any of those elements of G for which $\Phi_s = (\tilde{G}_{\{0, \log m\}}^d)^n$. Moreover, by (8.7) we then have

$$h^*(\tilde{X}_A, \mathbb{Z}, \Theta) = h^*(\tilde{G}_{\{0, \log m\}}^d) = h^*(\tilde{G}_{\{0, \log m\}}) = \log m. \quad (8.10)$$

Combining this with (8.8) and (8.9), we finally get $h^*(\tilde{X}_A, G, \Phi) = \log m$.

We have thus shown that if $A = \{0, \log m\}$, $m \in \mathbb{N}^*$, then $S_G(\tilde{X}_A) = \{0, \log m\} = A$.

Case 2: A has cardinality ≥ 3 .

So, \tilde{X}_A is a ‘flower’ with finitely or infinitely many ‘petals’, namely with the petals L_m for all $2 \leq m \leq \infty$ such that $\log m \in A$ and, if A is infinite, then also with the ‘limit’ petal $[w, u] \cup [u, v]$.

Recall that if T is a homeomorphism on \tilde{X}_A , then every petal is T -invariant (so, every petal is invariant for the action Φ) and T is different from the identity only on the union of finitely many pairwise disjoint sets $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log k\}}$.

Subcase 2a: $A = \{0\} \cup \{\log k_i : i = 1, 2, \dots, l\}$ is a finite set (possibly containing ∞).

Then $\tilde{X}_A = \bigcup_{i=1}^l L_{k_i}$. For the given action Φ , there are two possibilities.

- (1) The first possibility is that for every $s \in G$, Φ_s is the identity on \tilde{X}_A . Then

$$h^*(\tilde{X}_A, G, \Phi) = 0 \in A.$$

- (2) The second possibility is that there exist some petals L_{j_1}, \dots, L_{j_t} with $\{j_1, \dots, j_t\} \subseteq \{k_1, \dots, k_l\}$ such that only for $j \in \{j_1, \dots, j_t\}$ we have $\{\Phi_s|_{L_j} : s \in G\} \neq \{\text{Id}|_{L_j}\}$. We conclude that if (x_1, \dots, x_n) is an IN-tuple for Φ , then $x_1, \dots, x_n \in L_m$ for some $m \in \{j_1, \dots, j_t\}$. Moreover, by the construction we know that in such a case even $x_1, \dots, x_n \in \tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}$. Further, using (8.8) and the fact that $S_G(\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}) = \{0, \log m\}$, we obtain

$$h^*(L_m, G, \Phi|_{L_m}) = h^*(L_m, \{\Phi_s|_{L_m} : s \in G\}, \Psi|_{L_m}) = \log m.$$

It follows that $h^*(\tilde{X}_A, G, \Phi) = \max_{i=1}^t h^*(L_{j_i}, \{\Phi_s|_{L_{j_i}} : s \in G\}, \Psi|_{L_{j_i}}) = \max_{i=1}^t \log j_i \in A$.

We have shown that in this subcase $S_G(\tilde{X}_A) \subseteq A$, as required.

Subcase 2b: A is an infinite set with $\infty \in A$.

It follows from the construction of \tilde{X}_A and the fact that the petals are invariant for the action Φ , that

- each of the IN-tuples of Φ lies in one of the petals,

i.e. in L_m with $\log m \in A$ or in the limit petal $[w, u] \cup [u, v]$. One can say more. Since every homeomorphism on \tilde{X}_A is identity on $\bigcup_{\log m \in A} C_m \cup [w, u]$ (see Figure 8.3),

- the segment $[w, u]$ does not contain any IN-pair.

Further, we claim that

- the segment $[u, v]$ does not contain any IN-tuple of length ≥ 4 .

To see this, suppose on the contrary that this is not the case. Then there are two different points c_1, c_2 in the ‘interior’ of $[u, v]$ which form an IN-pair. However, every homeomorphism $T: \tilde{X}_A \rightarrow \tilde{X}_A$ is identity on $[u, v]$ and if it sends an interior point of some set $D_{m,0}$ to an interior point of this set (note also that it cannot be mapped into another petal) then T is necessarily the identity on $D_{m,0}$. This already shows that points from a small neighborhood of c_1 cannot visit a small neighborhood of c_2 under the action Φ . This is a contradiction with the the assumption that (c_1, c_2) is an IN-pair.

Suppose that for the fixed action Φ we have $h^*(\tilde{X}_A, G, \Phi) = \log t \notin A$. Hence t is finite and $t \geq 2$. Let (x_1, \dots, x_t) be an intrinsic IN-tuple for Φ . It lies in a petal.

If there exists m with $\log m \in A$ such that this tuple lies in L_m , then obviously all the points x_1, \dots, x_t belong to the same set $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}$. Then we have $t \leq m$ because $S_G(L_m) = S_G(\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log m\}}) = \{0, \log m\}$ and we have $t \neq m$ because $\log t \notin A$. Hence $m > t$. It follows that $h^*(\tilde{X}_A, G, \Phi) \geq \log m > \log t$, a contradiction with our assumption.

If the points $x_1, \dots, x_t \in [w, u] \cup [u, v]$, then they all have to lie in $[u, v]$ and so $t < 4$. By the definition of an IN-tuple and the construction of \tilde{X}_A (see Figure 8.3 and note that A is infinite now), we can find some petal L_m with $\log m \in A$ and $m > 4$ such that $\{\Phi_s|_{L_m} : s \in G\} \neq \{\text{Id}|_{L_m}\}$. Then we get

$$h^*(\tilde{X}_A, G, \Phi) \geq h^*(L_m, \{\Phi_s|_{L_m} : s \in G\}, \Psi|_{L_m}) = \log m > \log 4 > \log t,$$

and this is again a contradiction with our assumption. This finishes the proof that $S_G(\tilde{X}_A) \subseteq A$.

Finally, assume that G is finitely generated. We just need to consider the case when A is infinite with $\infty \notin A$. Assume that $g_1, g_2, \dots, g_n \in G$ is the list of all generators of G . For the given action Φ , there are two possibilities.

- (1) The first possibility is that $\Phi_{g_i} = \text{Id}|_{\tilde{X}_A}$, $i = 1, 2, \dots, n$. This implies that $\{\Phi_s : s \in G\} = \{\text{Id}|_{\tilde{X}_A}\}$ and then $h^*(\tilde{X}_A, G, \Phi) = 0 \in A$.
- (2) The second possibility is that there exists a nonempty subset $J \subseteq \{1, 2, \dots, n\}$ such that for every $j \in J$ we have $\Phi_{g_j} \neq \text{Id}|_{\tilde{X}_A}$. However, as we know, each of these finitely many homeomorphisms Φ_{g_j} , $j \in J$ is different from the identity only on the union of finitely many pairwise disjoint sets $\tilde{X}_{\{0, \log k\}}$. It follows that there exists a finite set $M \subseteq \mathbb{N}^*$ with $\log M \subseteq A$ such that

$$\{\Phi_s|_{L_j} : s \in G\} \neq \{\text{Id}|_{L_j}\} \text{ if and only if } j \in M.$$

Using the same argument as above (when A is a finite set), we obtain

$$h^*(\tilde{X}_A, G, \Phi) = \max_{i \in M} \log i \in \log M \subseteq A.$$

Hence $S_G(\tilde{X}_A) \subseteq A$. This ends the proof of the theorem. \square

We add some remarks.

Let G be a finite group. Then, for any action Φ , the set $\{\Phi_s : s \in G\}$ is finite and so, for any sequence $\sigma = \{s_n\}_{n \in \mathbb{Z}_+}$ in G and any finite open cover \mathcal{U} , the quantity in (8.2) is zero. Hence $S_G(X) = \{0\}$ for any space X .

If we wish to consider groups consisting of elements of finite order, i.e. torsion groups, the following example is instructive.

Example 8.12. Let X be the space in Figure 3.1. Define $f_1: X \rightarrow X$ by $f_1(x_i) = x_{i+1}$, $i = 1, 2, \dots, k_1 - 1$, $f_1(x_{k_1}) = x_1$ and $f_1|_{X \setminus \{x_1, x_2, \dots, x_{k_1}\}} = \text{Id}|_{X \setminus \{x_1, x_2, \dots, x_{k_1}\}}$. So, the first block is the ‘natural’ periodic orbit of period k_1 (where ‘natural’ means that every point x_i in this block is mapped to its ‘successor’ x_{i+1} , modulo the number of points in the block), all the other points of X are fixed for f_1 . Similarly, also for any integer $n \geq 2$ we can define a homeomorphism $f_n: X \rightarrow X$ such that the n -th block is the ‘natural’ periodic orbit of period $k_n - k_{n-1}$ and f_n is identity on the rest part of the space X . Now let G be the group generated by $\{f_1, f_2, f_3, \dots\}$ and Φ be the natural action. It follows from the construction of the space X and the maps f_i that (X, G, Φ) has IN-tuples of arbitrary lengths; in fact every finite subset of the countable infinite set $\{e_0^1, e_0^2, \dots\}$ forms an IN-tuple. Thus $h^*(X, G, \Phi) = \infty$.

Finally, consider semigroups rather than groups.

Let P be a topological semigroup with identity. One can consider P -actions on X . The difference with the group actions is that now the acting maps are just continuous maps (not necessarily homeomorphisms). This gives more freedom in constructing P -actions, therefore it is not surprising that if we repeat the above considerations for P -actions rather than for group actions, we get analogous results. Without repeating basically the same definitions, notations and arguments as above, we just say here that now $S_{\mathbb{Z}_+}(X) = S(X)$

(compare this with Proposition 8.10(a)) and that we have the following theorem (it is Theorem D from Introduction).

Theorem 8.13 (Theorem D). *Let P be a topological semigroup with identity such that there is a surjective semigroup homomorphism $P \rightarrow \mathbb{Z}_+$. Then for every set $\{0\} \subseteq A \subseteq \log \mathbb{N}^*$ with A finite or $\infty \in A$, there exists a one-dimensional continuum $X_A \subseteq \mathbb{R}^3$ with $S_P(X_A) = A$. If in addition P is also finitely generated, then such a continuum exists for every set $\{0\} \subseteq A \subseteq \log \mathbb{N}^*$.*

To prove this theorem, the space X_A can be the space defined in the proof of Theorem 8.2, i.e. the flower with a central point, whose petals are continua $X_{\{0, \log m\}}$ with $2 \leq m \leq \infty$ such that $\log m \in A$.

9. QUESTIONS

To end the paper we formulate some open problems.

9.1. The set $S(X)$ for the pseudoarc and the pseudocircle. In the continuum theory, the pseudoarc and the pseudocircle are very important examples of planar continua. The dynamics on them is also more and more studied. Let us mention at least the interesting question whether every continuous map of the pseudo-arc has either infinite entropy or zero entropy, see [11], cf. Barge's question Q19 in [46].

Question 9.1. *What is $S(X)$ if X is the pseudoarc or the pseudocircle?*

9.2. The set $S(X)$ if X admits a positive entropy map. We have constructed a continuum X with $S(X) = \{0, \infty\}$. Notice that this continuum admits only continuous selfmaps with zero topological entropy.

Question 9.2. *Can a continuum/space X with $S(X) = \{0, \infty\}$ admit a continuous selfmap with positive topological entropy?*

9.3. The set $S_{\min}(X)$ for the 2-torus and other continua. If a compact metric space X admits a minimal map (i.e. a continuous map with every orbit dense), put

$$S_{\min}(X) = \{h^*(T) \mid T: X \rightarrow X \text{ is minimal}\}.$$

If X is finite, then $S_{\min}(X) = \{0\}$. If X is a Cantor set then for each $n \in \mathbb{N}$ it admits a minimal selfmap T with $h^*(T) = \log n$, see [36, Example 2], and it is also known that a Cantor set admits minimal systems with positive entropy; therefore $S_{\min}(X) = \log \mathbb{N}^*$. If X is a circle then $S_{\min}(X) = \{0\}$ since the minimal maps on the circle are just the maps topologically conjugate to irrational rotations, and the topological sequence entropy is an invariant of topological conjugacy. However, already for the torus the question is nontrivial.

Question 9.3. *Is it true that if \mathbb{T}^2 is the 2-dimensional torus then $S_{\min}(\mathbb{T}^2) = \log \mathbb{N}^*$?*

9.4. Continua X_A as attractors? Recall that, due to Handel [21], the pseudocircle is known to be an attracting minimal set for a C^∞ diffeomorphism in the plane. Our continua X_A do not admit minimal maps. However, the following question essentially suggested by Benjamin Weiss is still challenging.

Question 9.4. *If a continuum X_A is embedded in a manifold M , does there exist a dynamics on M such that X_A is an attractor? Is it at least true that a Cook continuum in the plane can be an attractor for a continuous selfmap of the plane?*

9.5. Possible sets of values of topological entropy. The present paper deals with possible sets of values of supremum topological sequence entropy. One can consider an analogous problem for the usual topological entropy. If X is a nonempty compact metric space, consider the set

$$\text{Ent}(X) = \{h(T) : T \text{ is a continuous map } X \rightarrow X\}.$$

Of course, the set $\text{Ent}(X)$ always contains 0. It is also closed with respect to multiples, meaning that if $\alpha \in \text{Ent}(X)$ then $n\alpha \in \text{Ent}(X)$ for $n = 1, 2, \dots$. Apparently, the techniques from our paper can be useful for answering, at least partially, the following problem.

Question 9.5. *What are the possibilities for $\text{Ent}(X)$? Is it true that for every set $\{0\} \subseteq A \subseteq [0, \infty]$ which is closed with respect to multiples there exists a compact metric space X with $\text{Ent}(X) = A$?*

9.6. Group/semigroup actions case. Our Theorems 8.11 and 8.13 deal only with special kinds of groups and semigroups, respectively. We would like to know the answer to the following question (and the answer to its analogue for semigroup actions).

Question 9.6. *How to determine all groups G such that for every set $\{0\} \subseteq A \subseteq \log \mathbb{N}^*$, there exists a space/a continuum X_A with $S_G(X_A) = A$?*

REFERENCES

- [1] Ll. Alsedà, J. Llibre and M. Misiurewicz, *Combinatorial Dynamics and Entropy in Dimension One*, 2nd edition, Advanced Series in Nonlinear Dynamics **5**, World Scientific, Singapore, 2000.
- [2] E. Akin, J. Rautio, *Chain transitive homeomorphisms on a space: all or none*, Pacific J. Math. **291** (2017), no.1, 1–49.
- [3] F. Balibrea, T. Downarowicz, R. Hric, E. Snoha, V. Špitalský, *Almost totally disconnected minimal systems*, Ergodic Theory Dynam. Systems **29** (2009), 737–766.
- [4] F. Blanchard, *A disjointness theorem involving topological entropy*, Bull. Soc. Math. France **121** (1993), no. 4, 465–478.
- [5] F. Blanchard, B. Host and A. Maass, *Topological complexity*, Ergodic Theory Dynam. Systems **20** (2000), no. 3, 641–662.
- [6] F. Blanchard, W. Huang, E. Snoha, *Topological size of scrambled sets*, Colloq. Math. **110** (2008), no. 2, 293–361.
- [7] K. Borsuk, *Theory of retracts*, Monografie Matematyczne, Tom 44, Państwowe Wydawnictwo Naukowe, Warsaw, 1967.
- [8] J. S. Cánovas, *On topological sequence entropy of circle maps*, Appl. Gen. Topol. **2** (2001), no. 1, 1–7.
- [9] J. S. Cánovas, *Topological sequence entropy of interval maps*, Nonlinearity, **17** (2004), no. 1, 49–56.
- [10] J. S. Cánovas, *A guide to topological sequence entropy*. In: Progress in Mathematical Biology Research, pp. 101–139. Nova Science Publishers, New York, 2008.
- [11] M. Christopher, *Entropy of shift maps of the pseudo-arc*, Topology Appl. **159** (2012), no. 1, 34–39.
- [12] H. Cook, *Continua which admit only the identity mapping onto non-degenerate subcontinua*, Fund. Math. **60** (1967), 241–249.
- [13] T. Downarowicz, E. Snoha, D. Tywoniuk, *Minimal spaces with cyclic group of homeomorphisms*, J. Dynam. Differential Equations **29** (2017), no. 1, 243–257.
- [14] N. Franzová, J. Smítal, *Positive sequence topological entropy characterizes chaotic maps*, Proc. Amer. Math. Soc. **112** (1991), no. 4, 1083–1086.
- [15] F. García-Ramos, *Weak forms of topological and measure-theoretical equicontinuity: relationships with discrete spectrum and sequence entropy*, Ergodic Theory Dynam. Systems **37** (2017), no. 4, 1211–1237.
- [16] E. Glasner, *The structure of tame minimal dynamical systems for general groups*, Invent. Math. **211** (2018), no. 1, 213–244.
- [17] E. Glasner and B. Weiss, *Quasi-factors of zero-entropy systems*, J. Amer. Math. Soc. **8** (1995), no. 3, 665–686.
- [18] T. N. T. Goodman, *Topological sequence entropy*, Proc. London Math. Soc. **29** (1974), 331–350.
- [19] J. de Groot, *Groups represented by homeomorphism groups*, Math. Ann. **138** (1959), 80–102.
- [20] J. de Groot and R. J. Wille, *Rigid continua and topological group-pictures*, Arch. Math. **9** (1958), 441–446.
- [21] M. Handel, *A pathological area preserving C^∞ diffeomorphism of the plane*, Proc. Amer. Math. Soc. **86** (1982), no. 1, 163–168.
- [22] J. G. Hocking and G. S. Young, *Topology*, Addison-Wesley Publishing Co., Inc., Reading, Mass.-London, 1961.
- [23] W. Huang, *Tame systems and scrambled pairs under an Abelian group action*, Ergodic Theory Dynam. Systems **26** (2006), no. 5, 1549–1567.
- [24] W. Huang, S. Li, S. Shao and X. Ye, *Null systems and sequence entropy pairs*, Ergodic Theory Dynam. Systems **23** (2003), no. 5, 1505–1523.
- [25] W. Huang, P. Lu and X. Ye, *Measure-theoretical sensitivity and equicontinuity*, Israel J. Math. **183** (2011), 233C283.
- [26] W. Huang, A. Maass and X. Ye, *Sequence entropy pairs and complexity pairs for a measure*, Ann. Inst. Fourier (Grenoble) **54** (2004), no. 4, 1005–1028.
- [27] W. Huang and X. Ye, *A local variational relation and applications*, Israel J. Math. **151** (2006), 237–279.
- [28] W. Huang and X. Ye, *Combinatorial lemmas and applications to dynamics*, Adv. Math. **220** (2009), no. 6, 1689–1716.
- [29] W. Hurewicz, H. Wallman, *Dimension Theory*, Princeton University Press, Princeton, N. J., 1941.
- [30] D. Kerr and H. F. Li, *Independence in topological and C^* -dynamics*, Math. Ann. **338** (2007), 869–926.
- [31] J. Krzemppek, *Finite-to-one maps and dimension*, Fund. Math. **182** (2004), no. 2, 95–106.
- [32] J. Krzemppek, *Some examples of higher-dimensional rigid continua*, Houston J. Math. **35** (2009), no. 2, 485–500.
- [33] A. G. Kushnirenko, *On metric invariants of entropy type* (English, Russian original), Russian Math. Surveys, **22** (1967), no.5, 53–61. translation from Uspekhi Mat. Nauk **22** (1967), no.5(137), 57–65.
- [34] H. F. Li, *Personal communication*.
- [35] H. F. Li and Z. Rong, *Null actions and RIM non-open extensions of strongly proximal actions*, arXiv:1807.00423.
- [36] A. Maass and S. Shao, *Structure of bounded topological-sequence-entropy minimal systems*, J. Lond. Math. Soc. (2) **76** (2007), no. 3, 702–718.
- [37] T. Maćkowiak, *Singular arc-like continua*, Dissertationes Math. (Rozprawy Mat.) **257** (1986), 40 pp.
- [38] S. B. Nadler, Jr., *Continuum theory. An introduction*, Marcel Dekker, Inc., New York, 1992.
- [39] A. Pultr, V. Trnková, *Combinatorial, algebraic and topological representations of groups, semigroups and categories*, North-Holland Publishing Co., Amsterdam-New York, 1980.
- [40] A. N. Sharkovsky, *Coexistence of cycles of a continuous mapping of the line into itself*, Ukrain. Math. Zh. **16** (1964), 61–71 (Russian).

- [41] J. Smitál, *Chaotic functions with zero topological entropy*, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc. **297** (1986), no. 1, 269–282.
- [42] F. Tan, X. Ye and R. F. Zhang, *The set of sequence entropies for a given space*, Nonlinearity, **23** (2010), no. 1, 159–178.
- [43] F. Tan, *The set of sequence entropies for graph maps*, Topology Appl. **158** (2011), no.3, 533–541.
- [44] V. Trnková, *Non-constant continuous mappings of metric or compact Hausdorff spaces*, Comment. Math. Univ. Carolinae **13** (1972), 283–295.
- [45] V. Trnková, *All small categories are representable by continuous nonconstant mappings of bicomacta*, Soviet. Math. Dokl. **17** (1976), 1403–1406.
- [46] L. Wayne, *Continuum theory and dynamics problems*, Continuum theory and dynamical systems(Arcata, CA, 1989),99–101, Contemp. Math.,**117**, Amer. Math. Soc., Providence, RI, 1991.
- [47] G. T. Whyburn, *Analytic topology*, vol. 28, AMS Coll. Publications, Providence, RI, 1942.
- [48] X. Ye and R. F. Zhang, *Countable compacta admitting homeomorphisms with positive sequence entropy*, J. Dynam. Differential Equations **20** (2008), no. 4, 867–882.

LUBOMÍR SNOHA, DEPARTMENT OF MATHEMATICS, FACULTY OF NATURAL SCIENCES, MATEJ BEL UNIVERSITY, TAJOVSKÉHO 40, 974 01 BANSKÁ BYSTRICA, SLOVAKIA

E-mail address: `Lubomir.Snoha@umb.sk`

XIANGDONG YE, DEPARTMENT OF MATHEMATICS, UNIVERSITY OF SCIENCE AND TECHNOLOGY OF CHINA, HEFEI, ANHUI 230026, P.R. CHINA

E-mail address: `yexd@ustc.edu.cn`

RUIFENG ZHANG, SCHOOL OF MATHEMATICS, HEFEI UNIVERSITY OF TECHNOLOGY, HEFEI ANHUI 230009, P.R. CHINA

E-mail address: `rfzhang@hfut.edu.cn`